

NH

All the bodyguards surrounding Jiang Ning were all well trained and many of them had retired from the army, so they knew what this sort of murderous aura meant.

Their palms broke out in cold sweat even as they held guns in their hands.

They had a terrible feeling that as long as Jiang Ning stood there, there was no way they could do anything to him!

They had power in numbers and they were confident after going through so many battles.

But now, they only felt helpless, and they had lost courage.

Jiang Ning's sweeping gaze had sentenced them to death.

They only hoped that Hayson could be smart enough to cooperate with Jiang Ning and answer Jiang Ning's question seriously.

"They...they're all here! They're in Silicon Valley!" Hayson hastily replied without hesitation. He couldn't hold up against this terrifying pressure anymore and his entire shirt was soaked in perspiration.

"One of them is within Tescon's R&D department, while the other two are in other companies! I know where they are!"

Jiang Ning wiggled his finger and Hayson quickly pulled his phone out.

NH

“I have information on them and I can give it to you!”

Hayson quickly opened the folder on his phone with those men’s personal information and offered it to Jiang Ning with an ingratiating smile.

This was the first time he felt so close to death!

“You’ve done pretty well.” Jiang Ning glanced at the phone and kept it away. “I’ll give you a referral fee after I get these men.”

He continued to hold Hayson hostage as he moved back, and nobody dared to go anywhere near them.

Jiang Ning hailed a cab and pushed Hayson into it.

“Those three men in exchange for your life. That’s a good deal, isn’t it?”

He then shut the door and got the driver to drive.

Hayson sat in the car and didn’t dare to move at all. His legs were still trembling and he clenched his fists tightly while his teeth chattered angrily.

“Do you know who on earth you’ve offended?!” Hayson was practically shouting. “Don’t you know what sort of influence Tescon commands in Silicon Valley?!”

He sounded like he had gone mad. He had never been so humiliated before.

NH

Jiang Ning had taken one of his professors away from him just like that, and now he had even become a hostage.

Jiang Ning peered at him, then immediately dislocated all of Hayson's limbs. The terrible screams he made nearly caused the driver to lose his grip on the steering wheel.

"I don't know, and I don't need to know," said Jiang Ning. "If these men were willing to remain in this place, I wouldn't force them. But since they were coerced into staying in this place, then I have to ask them if they want to leave or not."

"And I happen to need these men too. I'm pretty sure they'll be willing to leave with me."

"Why...you..."

Hayson's forehead was covered with large drops of perspiration. Jiang Ning had dislocated his limbs, so there was no way for him to move.

The terrible pain he felt made him wish he could just faint right now, but he had no choice but to bear with it.

"If I were you, I wouldn't speak anymore and I'd just quietly conserve my energy. After all, resistance is futile," said Jiang Ning before keeping quiet again.

He brought Hayson to a hotel and realigned one of Hayson's arms so that Hayson could make arrangements on his phone.

NH

Three people for one Hayson.

This didn't seem much better than kidnapping the men directly.

Brother Gou didn't say anything and just watched Hayson closely.

He had already sent Luo Lin off on a plane back to China, and now he had to make sure the remaining three men also went back with him.

Once all these people got together, Lin Group's new venture was definitely going to proceed smoothly. These few researchers was already half the job done!

This was the most important thing to Lin Group right now.

As long as Lin Yuzhen wanted to do something, Jiang Ning would definitely help her to succeed!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

In the hotel.

Hayson remained seated on a chair. His legs had been dislocated and only one arm could move.

Jiang Ning had allowed him that one good arm so that he could make some phone calls.

Hayson had already calmed down by this time.

“I’ve already made the calls and arranged for people to bring these three men in exchange for me.” He looked at Jiang Ning and grit his teeth. “But are you sure you can leave Silicon Valley in one good piece?”

Hayson scoffed.

“The people in Silicon Valley won’t allow these people to leave this place alive!”

These men carried the knowledge of the best technology in the world, and had all the research data on the most advanced integrated circuits. Letting these people go was as good as letting go of their best troops!

Hayson’s words were filled with malice and murder, and he didn’t bother being polite.

This was Silicon Valley, a place where they had control over for the past few decades and for nearly a century now!

The powers backing them were in control of the economies of several areas because of the technology they possessed. So even if they had to

NH

pay a price, they would never allow anyone to take any resources away from them!

“Are you sure you want to keep me here?” Jiang Ning turned to look at Hayson as he drank a mouthful of water. “I don’t think you’d do that.”

Keep him here?

And not respectfully send him away?

Jiang Ning was rather amused. He was getting closer and closer to the Third World again, and was returning to this familiar territory. He wondered if those old friends of his missed him.

Lin Group wanted to expand, and they were destined to become a corporation above the rest. They were going to become a huge conglomerate that had international influence.

And the real upper class of society was the Third World they were talking about!

There was incomparable wealth, power and status within the Third World.

The people of the Third World were the ones who were truly in control of the world.

Lin Group’s future direction was to gain a foothold within the Third World, or to even gain a strong and influential foothold.

This might only be a dream to Lin Yuzhen, or even an impossible dream.

NH

But as long as she had Jiang Ning, then any dream was possible.

Jiang Ning continued to sit calmly and elegantly in his chair.

He wasn't bothered by Hayson's threats.

He knew that the hotel was already surrounded by people.

Tescon was a powerful company within this region, and Hayson's family was very powerful in the illegal circles.

Hayson was in middle management at Tescon, and even though he didn't hold a very high position in the family, his identity and position could not be ignored.

If something happened to him, his family would definitely respond.

But Jiang Ning remained unbothered.

RIIING...

Jiang Ning's phone suddenly started ringing.

He glanced at the number and ignored the call.

Hayson looked threateningly at Jiang Ning.

"Aren't you going to pick it up and see who's calling you?" he scoffed coldly. "Maybe someone is trying to convince you not to court death."

NH

Hayson was sure that his family had already come forward to rescue him. All those people downstairs belonged to his family and it was going to be difficult for Jiang Ning to escape!

Even if those three men were sent here, there was no way Jiang Ning could take them away. In fact, they might all die here!

But Jiang Ning continued to ignore Hayson.

He got up and looked out of the window. A few dozen cars were parked at the entrance downstairs and the entire hotel was surrounded.

There were layers and layers of people both inside and outside the hotel, and they swarmed the hotel like ocean waves.

“Scared now?” Hayson’s lips curled into a smile. “I told you already, even if I hand over those men to you, you might not be able to leave this place at all.”

“You have no idea what significance these three men hold.”

“Then how do you think your own life compares to theirs?”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Jiang Ning turned and said, "I'm afraid that your life is worth a little more money. Otherwise, why else would so many people be here?"

"Your position in the family isn't worth this much effort."

Hayson's expression changed slightly.

He scoffed, "Whatever you say doesn't matter! Put your hands up, kneel down and surrender and you'll get a chance! Once everyone gets here, you won't even get the chance to regret this!"

RIIING...

Jiang Ning's phone rang again.

He walked over and picked up the call.

"Jiang Ning, you're in Silicon Valley?" the other party was clearly anxious. Jiang Ning had no idea how Amelia found out that he was here.

He had only come here to poach a few talents, so there was no need to make such a big fuss.

"That's right. I'm here to poach a few talents."

"I heard about it. You're holding Hayson the Third hostage in exchange for those few men you want." Amelia's voice sounded rather worried. "The Haysons aren't a simple family and they're very powerful in Silicon Valley. Are you...are you confident?"

If Jiang Ning ran into trouble, she could try to put

NH

in a good word for him. The Ceyrankas were in a position to at least speak to the Haysons.

“Confidence?” Jiang Ning sounded confused. “Why do I need confidence?”

“Jiang Ning...” said Amelia. “If you need the Ceyrankas to step in, let me know. I’ll be waiting for your call.”

She understood Jiang Ning.

A man like Jiang Ning never feared anything.

She had heard about how Lin Group wanted to develop their own integrated circuit technology, so they needed relevant experts and talents in the field.

This wasn’t just something that Lin Group wanted to do. Chinese businesses within China had always wanted to do this, but never managed to achieve it.

Now that Lin Yuzhen wanted to do this, Jiang Ning would definitely support her!

But she didn’t expect Jiang Ning to actually poach people from Silicon Valley!

That was like pulling a tooth out from a tiger’s mouth!

She knew that the Haysons backed Tescon and they were no ordinary family. They weren’t internationally famous, but they were actually a very terrifying clan. They had the support of the

NH

top brass of the US army.

Jiang Ning...was like throwing eggs at rocks now.

“Looks like someone has really called you to tell you to escape.” Hayson listened in on the call and seemed to relax instantly. “The Haysons maintain a low profile and aren’t well-known globally, but those who are powerful enough would know about us.”

He looked at Jiang Ning with a strange smile on his face that seemed to be mocking Jiang Ning. It was as if he wanted to see what sort of expression Jiang Ning would have now that he realized he had offended a terrifying group of people he shouldn’t have offended at all, but had no way out of this situation.

But Hayson was disappointed.

Jiang Ning’s expression remained calm.

It was as if he had just received a prank call and it didn’t mean anything to him.

“Have you sent the three of them over yet?”

Jiang Ning couldn’t be bothered to waste any time on Hayson.

He had gotten Hayson to arrange for the men to be sent directly to the airport and Brother Gou would arrange the rest. Once Brother Gou had all three men with him, Jiang Ning would release Hayson.

NH

He was a man, so he had to be a man of his word.

Hayson used his good arm to call a number and put the phone on speakerphone.

“Have you sent those experts over yet?” said Hayson as he looked at Jiang Ning. “It’s alright, send them over. It’s a good chance to help them understand that they can forget about ever leaving Silicon Valley, and it’s a good opportunity for them to experience what despair feels like.”

He hung up and leaned back against the sofa. Even his dislocated limbs didn’t seem as painful anymore.

And that was because he was going to make Jiang Ning pay for doing this to him!

He was going to make Jiang Ning suffer more than he did!

He wanted Jiang Ning to suffer a hundred times more than himself, and to beg for mercy as he knelt in repentance before him!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

“Are you sure you want to give up your last chance?” teased Hayson.

There was a playful glint in his eyes now.

The more pain he felt in his body, the better. That way, the excitement and vindication he would feel when Jiang Ning suffered a hundred times worse later would be intensified.

“You’ve used your own life in exchange for these few experts. You’re quite the hero.”

Hayson leaned against the sofa and started looking smug.

He could hear the sound of many footsteps coming up to this floor!

The way he looked at Jiang Ning was not only filled with mocking and disdain, but also some sympathy.

RIIIING! Jiang Ning’s phone rang again, and this time, it was Brother Gou.

“Big Boss, I’ve got the men. I’m sending them off now.”

Jiang Ning hung up, walked over to Hayson and realigned the rest of his limbs.

“You may leave now.”

“Leave?” Hayson’s expression suddenly became threatening. “I can leave, but can you?”

NH

He really couldn't understand. How could Jiang Ning continue to be so arrogant and say that he was letting him go?

Didn't Jiang Ning know how many people were downstairs?

"If you keep talking like this, then I won't leave."
Jiang Ning pulled a chair over and sat down as he looked up at Hayson. "When that happens, you'd better not be begging for me to leave."

"HAHAHA!"

Hayson felt like he had heard the funniest joke in the world.

He walked to the door and pulled the door open.

A huge group of men dashed into the room!

They were all armed to the teeth, and the weapons in their hands exuded a malicious and murderous aura!

KA KA KA!

All the safety catches were pulled back and all guns were now pointing at Jiang Ning.

Jiang Ning remained seated in his chair and looked completely calm. It was as if all these people surrounding him were just air.

"Don't kill him just yet!" Hayson narrowed his eyes and his face twitched. "I'm going to torture him first!"

NH

He was about to take a step forward when he heard more footsteps outside the door.

Hayson turned and saw a man around 50 years old walk in. His jaw was squarish and his gaze was as sharp as a knife.

“Stop right there,” said the man in a low voice.

“Uncle Robbie, you’re here!” greeted Hayson respectfully as he immediately bowed his head.

Robbie ignored him and walked over to Jiang Ning. When he looked at Jiang Ning’s face, his gaze immediately became rather complicated.

Their eyes met and so many scenes of the past appeared in Robbie’s mind.

“Uncle Robbie, this fellow is the one who wants to poach all the experts from Tescon and has no regard for the Haysons at all!” said Hayson. “If we let him leave today, then the Haysons’ reputation will suffer, and everyone in Silicon Valley will laugh at us!”

A crazed look flashed in his eyes as he had already thought of a million and one ways he could torture Jiang Ning.

“He said he wants me to stay,” said Jiang Ning.

He looked at Robbie very calmly, and wasn’t the slightest bit panicky.

But those words were enough to make Robbie’s eyes twitch and Hayson felt his heart shudder

NH

violently. Why did it sound like Jiang Ning knew Robbie?

“If you want me to stay, I can consider it.”

Jiang Ning sat rather lazily in his chair, but the look on his face was as grim as Robbie’s.

It didn’t matter that a few dozen men had surrounded Jiang Ning.

“You’re already about to die and you’re still trying to talk big?!” Hayson started yelling angrily. “Uncle Robbie, don’t bother wasting your saliva on him. Give him to me and I will make him...”

“Let him leave.”

But Robbie shook his head before Hayson could finish his sentence.

“Wh-what?!”

Hayson thought he had heard Robbie wrongly and his expression was filled with disbelief.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

What did Robbie just say?

Let Jiang Ning go? But why?!

Jiang Ning wasn't going anywhere! Hayson was determined to make sure he died here!

"I said, let him leave." Robbie looked at Jiang Ning and his emotions became more and more complex. A tinge of anger now appeared on his face.

But his anger was towards Hayson. He didn't dare to be angry with Jiang Ning.

This idiot actually wanted Jiang Ning to stay!

Did he wanted Jiang Ning to stay and turn the Haysons upside down?

"Uncle Robbie, this fellow poached Tescon's experts and he even wanted to kill me! He..."

"I SAID! LET! HIM! LEAVE!" Robbie's voice suddenly increased in volume as he spun to glare at Hayson and slapped him across the face. Hayson's other cheek immediately swelled up.

Hayson clutched his cheek as his eyes widened. He couldn't believe Robbie would slap him.

Even though Robbie was his father's trusted subordinate, he was still not a member of the family after all. But he had actually slapped him because of Jiang Ning, a man who deserved to die?

NH

“Are you going to come back?” Robbie ignored Hayson’s expression and continued to look at Jiang Ning as his voice carried mixed emotions.

“I don’t want to come back,” Jiang Ning glanced back at him. “But there are always some people out there who keep forcing me to come back.”

Robbie’s eyelid twitched and he turned to glance at Hayson. The murderous and sinister look in his eyes made Hayson feel terrified inside.

Robbie clearly wanted to kill him!

Hayson couldn’t help but take two steps back as his heart palpitated and he didn’t dare to make a squeak.

This man was his father’s grim reaper who was famous for sweeping across the Third World. But he was willing to kill him because of this Jiang Ning?

“You’re mistaken,” said Robbie. “Nobody hopes that you will come back.”

“Absolutely nobody will ever want you to come back.”

He took a deep breath and waved his hands. The fully armed men in the room immediately retreated.

“Uncle Robbie...” Hayson was still indignant. What was going on?

Why did Robbie tell everyone to leave? They could

NH

have killed Jiang Ning so easily today!

They definitely could!

“The Haysons don’t want you back either. They don’t want you to stay in Silicon Valley either. Not even a day longer.”

Hayson could hear that Robbie’s voice was filled with wariness.

Jiang Ning remained on his chair as he narrowed his eyes slightly. The faint murderous aura on his face suddenly seemed to intensify in an instant.

Robbie was tense all over and clenched his fists tightly as he prepared to fight to the bitter end.

But he relaxed his fists in the end.

“Those experts are from China in the first place. They had nowhere to go back then, so the Haysons took them in. Since you need them back now, the Haysons will return them to you.” His voice sounded like he was compromising.

“Please leave.”

And it had a tinge of pleading too.

Jiang Ning got up and scoffed.

He walked towards Robbie and Robbie didn’t even dare to move.

“If the others knew how to behave like you, then they might have lived for a few more years.”

NH

Jiang Ning then patted his shoulder and walked out of the room without even giving Hayson a second glance.

The room was left with only Robbie and Hayson, and the air was so heavy, it felt like they were suddenly in outer space and it was almost impossible to breathe.

Hayson was particularly confused. He didn't expect things to turn out like this at all.

But why?!

"Uncle Robbie...AHH!" Just as he opened his mouth, Robbie slapped him extremely hard across the face.

Hayson went rolling out from the impact.

"Do you know why I'm the only one left out of the five fighters that your father once had?"

Robbie's expression was threatening and his entire body was shaking. "Are you trying to get the entire Hayson family killed?!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

This slap immediately slapped Hayson awake.

He collapsed on the floor and both his mouth and eyes were wide open in shock.

He knew that within the Haysons, especially his own father, there were some really highly skilled fighters that had been of great assistance and support to his father. They had helped his father to gain more influence within the Haysons.

But some years ago, the rest were wiped out overnight and Robbie was the only survivor!

All these men were his father's best men and they enjoyed an even higher position than Hayson himself.

Those other fighters...died at Jiang Ning's hands?

"I'm warning you, even if Tescon ends up going bankrupt, you must never provoke this man!"
Robbie grit his teeth. "If you force him to enter the Third World again, then the rest will come after the Haysons without him doing anything!"

That man was truly terrifying!

Just the thought of the past made Robbie tremble in fear.

He had remained calm and hadn't charged at Jiang Ning out of hatred because he knew that if he tried to attack Jiang Ning, he would definitely die.

Take revenge?

NH

He didn't stand a chance!

If Hayson's father had not made the mistake of offending China, then Robbie's fellow comrades wouldn't have died so tragically at Jiang Ning's hands.

But he didn't say anything about that.

Right now, he didn't even have the desire to take revenge. Staying alive was more important than anything else.

Robbie glanced at Hayson as his eyes glinted, but left without saying anymore.

His hand was still trembling and it took him every ounce of strength to walk steadily. His back was already covered in cold sweat.

When Jiang Ning patted his shoulder, he felt like the grim reaper had just rubbed shoulders with him!

"How...how could this be..."

Hayson was still on the floor as his lips twitched uncontrollably. The two sides of his face were very swollen.

He simply couldn't believe that Jiang Ning was actually this terrifying.

He could even make all the huge powers within the Third World afraid of him!

Who exactly was this man?

NH

Downstairs.

Jiang Ning stood at the entrance of the hotel and looked at the crowd that had already moved at least a hundred meters away from the hotel.

Who was he?

Those who knew who he was were extremely fearful of him. That was who he was.

Jiang Ning glanced around at all these men, then sauntered out of the hotel as he disappeared into the darkness.

.....

One day later.

Donghai.

Luo Lin and the rest stood on the ground that they had thought about day and night for years and were still feeling rather excited.

They were back!

They were finally back!

All of them had reddened eyes as they pursed their lips and tried to control their emotions.

They sat inside Lin Group's meeting room for a while and soon heard the sound of high heels clicking against the floor.

"Professor Luo, hello everyone!" Lin Yuzhen

NH

smiled and quickly went forward to shake everyone's hands. "I'm so happy to see all of you! This is really so exciting!"

"Hello, CEO Lin!" all the experts in the room greeted her in return.

"All of you are older than me, so just call me Yuzhen, no need to be so formal with me," said Lin Yuzhen with a smile. "Please take a seat."

Lin Yuzhen had thought about starting a research lab to create high tech integrated circuits for a long time, but she dared not tell Jiang Ning about it.

It was only after Jiang Ning went to Korea and came into contact with Lee Group did Lin Yuzhen realize that even though they were both East Asian countries, they could only watch as other countries advanced in this area while they were unable to carve out a niche for themselves. This made Lin Yuzhen really upset.

She decided that she wanted to help even more people, and help the society at large!

Jiang Ning told her before that once a corporation grew past a certain size, the most important thing was no longer whether the company made money or how much money it made. The most important thing was how it was going to take on more responsibility for the society it was in.

Lin Yuzhen's kindness was a huge power that could change this world!

NH

Jiang Ning believed in that, so Lin Yuzhen believed in it too!

“I’m sure Jiang Ning has already told you about starting a research lab for the R&D of high tech, and I’m really happy that all of you could join us.” Lin Yuzhen took a deep breath because she was equally excited. “I’ve waited for this day for a long time. Those who have been looking forward to having our own integrated circuit have waited for a long time too.”

“I can promise you one thing around here,” she said seriously. “This R&D lab will be wholly in the hands of all of you in this room, and there will be no limit to the amount of funding given! Lin Group will put in our best efforts to work together with everyone to create a new path for our country!”

Luo Lin and the rest shook at these words.

“Yuzhen, then the few of us here can promise you one thing too,” said Luo Lin after everyone had exchanged determined glances. “We will definitely come up with our own integrated circuit!”

Lin Group had provided them with such excellent terms and had been such a big help. They had even brought them back from Silicon Valley.

They knew how hard it was just to do that.

They had spent many years in Silicon Valley and knew how frightening those major powers in the region were. Just the Haysons backing Tescon alone was mysteriously powerful.

NH

Jiang Ning must have paid a terrible price just to bring them back here.

If they didn't come up with their own integrated circuit after all this trouble, then Jiang Ning and Lin Group's sacrifice would have been in vain.

Which other corporation would still be willing to pay such a high price to come up with their own integrated circuit if they failed this time?

"Excellent!" Lin Yuzhen nodded vigorously. "I'll wait to hear good news from all of you!"

She got her staff to send Luo Lin and the other experts home to take a rest first. Lin Group had specially prepared houses for them to live in Donghai comfortably with their families.

Lin Yuzhen had done everything that Lin Group was able to do for them.

She believed that the experts would be appreciative of her efforts and this gratefulness would become their motivation to work harder.

Lin Yuzhen left the office, reached home, flung her bag onto the sofa and ran upstairs in a hurry.

"Hubby!" She pounced onto the bed.

She stretched her limbs out like a flying squirrel as she landed on the bed and nearly squashed the sleeping Jiang Ning.

"Wifey..." Jiang Ning peeked out and still looked a little sleepy. He had just flown back the night

NH

before and was fast asleep. “Did you grow fatter?”

“Nonsense!” Lin Yuzhen giggled and tucked herself under the blanket as her voice softened, “You can pinch me if you don’t believe me...”

The atmosphere immediately changed once she got under the covers.

Jiang Ning was alert and he became all energized now.

He flipped over and his eyes looked like sparks were flying out from them.

“Did you miss me?” asked Jiang Ning.

“I did.” Lin Yuzhen bit her lip gently.

“Which part of you missed me?”

“In my heart, in my mind,” Lin Yuzhen pulled her arms around Jiang Ning’s neck gently and her voice grew softer but her breathing grew heavier as she plastered herself against his chest. “And here too.”

It felt electrifying!

Jiang Ning was nearly going mad.

When did this girl learn to do something like that? He couldn’t hold himself back anymore.

His eyes immediately sparkled brightly.

“Yuzhen! What are you doing! Why did you go and

NH

disrupt Jiang Ning's sleep the moment you returned? Can't you let him have a good rest? Come down right now!"

A flurry of anxious footsteps came running up the stairs. It was probably Su Mei coming to chase Lin Yuzhen out of the room!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Lin Yuzhen immediately slid out from under the blanket, combed her hair properly and made sure her dress wasn't a mess.

Just after she straightened herself out, she heard someone knocking on the door.

“Lin Yuzhen! Come down right now!”

Su Mei's voice was as loud as thunder.

Lin Yuzhen glared at Jiang Ning as she helplessly bit her lips.

It was impossible for her to stay in this house anymore.

Those who didn't know better would have thought that this was Jiang Ning's home and she was the daughter-in-law instead.

“Ha, you reap what you sow,” she glared at Jiang Ning. “You always butter up to Mum, so now she pampers you so much!”

Lin Yuzhen got up and pulled the door open to see Su Mei holding a rolling pin and all ready to bang the door down.

“Muuuumm...”

“Hush!” Su Mei put a finger to her lips and frowned. “Jiang Ning spent such a long time working out there, so he must be dead tired! Don't disturb his sleep!”

She dragged Lin Yuzhen out of the room and

NH

carefully closed the door behind her.

“Mum...” Lin Yuzhen turned back to see Jiang Ning lying on the bed as if his soul had left him and he felt like crying but no tears came to his eyes. She said a little sympathetically, “I didn’t disturb his sleep at all, he was sleeping like a child.”

Sleeping like a child...

Lin Yuzhen’s voice echoed in Jiang Ning ears for a while.

He lay on the bed and just sighed.

After a long time, his emotions and body finally calmed back down.

Jiang Ning took a bath, got changed and went downstairs. He could smell the fragrance of chicken soup coming from the kitchen.

“Jiang Ning, you’re up! I’ve boiled chicken soup for you, I’ll get it for you now!” said Su Mei with a bright smile as she walked back into the kitchen to take the soup out.

She had only one bowl in hand, but after she noticed Lin Yuzhen looking at her from the sofa, she paused for a while and went back into the kitchen to get one more.

“You should drink some too. Jiang Ning, eat more of the chicken.”

“Thanks Mum,” said Jiang Ning with a smile. “I

NH

was wondering where that wonderful smell came from. I was even salivating in my dreams.”

He ladled out the soup from the pot and the fragrance of the soup hit his nostrils.

Jiang Ning ladled one bowl of soup out, then turned to look at Lin Yuzhen. “Wifey, come over and have some soup. Mum boiled this specially for you.”

“Oh really? Madam Su?” Lin Yuzhen scoffed quietly. “You boiled this for me?”

“Of course,” said Jiang Ning with a smile. “You have to condition your body well because Mum wants a grandchild.”

Su Mei immediately burst out laughing.

“I know you’re all busy with work and it’s up to you two when you want to have children. But I’m really looking forward to it.”

She didn’t have anything else to do at home besides taking care of these few adults in the house, so she really wished she could help take care of her grandchildren.

Jiang Ning was so formidable and Lin Yuzhen was so pretty. Their children would definitely be an amazing combination!

Su Mei looked at both of them and was very certain that their children would be both smart and good looking!

NH

“Mum...” Lin Yuzhen blushed immediately.

How could her mother talk about childbearing so directly?

“You two had better have at least one boy and one girl. You can have a few more too, since we can afford to raise them!”

Su Mei couldn't care less.

They were all adults already, so there was nothing to be embarrassed about. Besides, having children was an important matter.

The more she thought about it, the more excited she became. Her eyes were sparkling so brightly now.

“You two have nothing on in the afternoon, right?” Su Mei looked at Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen.

“N-nothing, we're resting today.” Lin Yuzhen pursed her lips.

“Then don't go out today. It's so hot outside anyway, so it's better for you two to just rest in your own room and not go anywhere. I'll send dinner up later!”

Jiang Ning nearly spat a mouthful of chicken soup out.

NH

Jiang Ning stared at Su Mei and couldn't believe that his mother-in-law was going to lock them inside the house so that she could get a grandchild.

"Mum..."

"You two work hard, then your dad and I can get a grandchild by next year. That's the most important thing to this family right now!"

"Expansion and advancement is the most important thing in the company, while having children is the most important thing in the home!" said Su Mei very seriously. "I don't mean to interfere with both of you, but as your parents, that's our hope as well. You two just do things according to your own schedules, I won't force you."

Jiang Ning exchanged glances with Lin Yuzhen.

It was true that she didn't force them and she allowed them to make their own decision on this.

But if they had to stay in the room together all day, then of course something was going to happen.

After they finished the chicken soup, Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen were chased upstairs by Su Mei and she even locked the door for them.

Jiang Ning sat on the bed while Lin Yuzhen sat on the chair and the two of them looked at one another.

"My mum must be nuts, right?" She shook her

NH

head vigorously. She saw Jiang Ning staring straight at her and quickly folded her arms to protect herself. “Don’t try anything funny, it’s like 3 in the afternoon and it’s really not appropriate...”

Jiang Ning laughed and waved her over. “Come here.”

“What do you want?” Lin Yuzhen cautiously walked over and sat down on the side of the bed. “Don’t do anything funny!”

“I’m not trying to do anything funny.” Jiang Ning laughed. “I want to talk to you seriously.”

He cleared his throat and looked serious.

“What is it?”

Lin Yuzhen leaned over and Jiang Ning pulled her into his arms.

“We...should think about having a child.” Jiang Ning’s voice was very soft but it felt like an electric current that hit Lin Yuzhen in the heart and made her feel numb immediately.

This...this was a serious matter alright.

“Stop it! Stop it!” Lin Yuzhen’s face reddened as she placed one finger on her lips and pointed another finger at the door as she whispered, “Listen to that!”

She pricked up her ears and could hear some movement outside the door.

NH

Jiang Ning turned to look, but of course he had already heard this noise. He didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

There was someone standing at their door!

The two of them exchanged glances and didn't know what to say.

"Uh, Wifey, since Mum wants a grandchild so badly, let's help to fulfil this dream of hers!" said Jiang Ning loudly on purpose.

"I read somewhere that we have to rest well and shouldn't be disturbed!" Lin Yuzhen chimed in loudly as well.

In no time, the footsteps outside the door moved further away.

Lin Yuzhen breathed a sigh of relief and leaned against Jiang Ning's shoulder.

"It's all your fault for putting ideas into my mum's head."

"She's not wrong," laughed Jiang Ning. "We should think about having a child to order about."

He gently caressed Lin Yuzhen's hair.

"I want to talk to you about something serious."

Lin Yuzhen turned and looked at Jiang Ning with a red face.

"It's really something serious," said Jiang Ning.

NH

“Now that we’ve established the R&D lab, coming up with our own integrated circuit is only a matter of time. But we ought to prepare the raw materials for manufacturing ICs first.”

“Raw materials?”

“That’s right. The supply chain for this is very important and I don’t want anybody else to be involved in the process. This sort of core technology should be fully within our own control.”

Jiang Ning nodded.

Since Lin Group wanted to get this done, then they had to do it to the best of their ability.

It wasn’t only to be in control of the technology but to also be in control of the manufacturing and production lines without allowing anyone else to interfere.

Jiang Ning knew that the amount of money that the country spent on importing integrated circuits every year even exceeded the amount of money spent on petroleum!

ICs were needed in anything from TV sets and rice cookers all the way to super computers and satellites. These were all items that formed part of daily life, so how could they continue to leave such technology in the hands of others?

“I’ve just gotten news that a mine has been discovered and the amount of silica inside is shocking. Also, it’s very pure silica too!”

NH

“Where?” Lin Yuzhen immediately became very excited.

Of course she knew that it was important to have a lot of raw material on hand for the production of integrated circuits. But the final product’s quality depended a lot on the quality of the raw material as well.

If they could obtain high quality raw materials, then that would be half the job done!

She looked excitedly at Jiang Ning. It was as if the exact thing she needed right now had fallen from the sky.

“The Middle East,” replied Jiang Ning .

Lin Yuzhen exclaimed the moment he said that.

“The Middle East?”

That messy and war torn area?

Battles were being fought every single day, so just surviving in that sort of place was already difficult enough, never mind doing business.

Besides those selling arms, pretty much nobody else in the world would dream of doing business in that region.

“You’re kidding, right?” Lin Yuzhen was a little worried.

“I’m not kidding. That’s the news the Li family sent to me.”

NH

Back when Lin Group expanded into Las Vegas, Li Zhengshang and Li Genhong, the two in charge of the Chinese Chamber of Commerce, had suffered miserably at Jiang Ning's hands.

Jiang Ning had given them a chance to redeem themselves by sending them to the Middle East.

The two of them had really gained a foothold in the Middle East now. Even though the process was tough, they still managed it anyway.

"That place is too messy and it's not a place we can expand to. It's too dangerous."

Of course Lin Yuzhen was worried. She knew exactly what sort of place that was.

She didn't want Jiang Ning to take any risk. Not even a tiny bit.

Nothing was more important to her than Jiang Ning's safety. And even though Jiang Ning was so powerful, she felt that he would still be in danger in that sort of place.

After all, all the people there were a bunch of nutcases. There were all sorts of mercenary armies fighting one another all day long.

That was no place to do business.

Besides, if such a mine was discovered, then someone else would take notice and a fight would definitely ensue.

"It's not dangerous," Jiang Ning just shook his

NH

head gently. "It's not dangerous at all. I've been there before."

"In fact, that place has some pretty nice scenery, but not everybody knows how to appreciate it."

"Jiang Ning..." Lin Yuzhen pursed her lips.
"Hubby...are you going there because of me?"

"Of course."

Jiang Ning wouldn't lie just because he didn't want Lin Yuzhen to worry.

He reached out and pinched Lin Yuzhen's cheeks gently as he laughed. "Besides you, I don't care about anybody else."

"You are the most important person to me in this world."

Jiang Ning hardly went back to the Jiang house in the north. Even though he didn't blame Jiang Daoran as much as before, he didn't feel at ease living with Jiang Daoran.

Since he had left the house, then he had to reconcile this with himself and not with Jiang Daoran.

Only one person occupied the most important position in his heart since that day fifteen years ago.

"And if I don't want you to go?" Lin Yuzhen bit her lips.

NH

“No, you wouldn’t do that,” said Jiang Ning. “You know the responsibility that lies on my shoulders. And you know the responsibility that lies on your shoulders and Lin Group’s shoulders too.”

“We’ve come to a point where we aren’t living for ourselves anymore.”

He gently scratched Lin Yuzhen’s nose.

If Lin Yuzhen just wanted to be an ordinary person on the street, Jiang Ning would have been willing to just live a relaxed and leisurely life even if they were poor. But Lin Yuzhen wasn’t such a person.

Jiang Ning also hoped that the rest of the world could see her kindheartedness.

“Don’t worry, I’m confident that there won’t be any danger.” Jiang Ning held onto Lin Yuzhen’s hand. “What you need to do is to lead Lin Group well and take up the responsibility that we ought to. I have confidence in you.”

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Lin Yuzhen didn't say anything.

After a long time, she nodded. "I understand."

She couldn't hold Jiang Ning back unnecessarily.

When Jiang Ning was working hard to move forward, she had to catch up and coordinate her efforts with Jiang Ning by completing what she had to do.

The two of them just hugged each other and didn't do anything much more than that. Lin Yuzhen talked about work and got Jiang Ning involved as they both drew up a blueprint of the future they looked forward to.

Meanwhile.

Back in Silicon Valley.

Everyone had found out about how Tescon's experts had been poached.

Hayson was feeling very indignant inside, but he didn't dare to make any noise when he thought about what Robbie said.

He had been scolded by his father for a few hours just because of that Jiang Ning!

Who would have known that fellow was this terrifying?

On top of that, this frightening man was so ridiculously low key and didn't make himself known at all. If Robbie didn't know him from

NH

before, the Haysons would probably be wiped out by now!

He thought about how the Ceyrankas had suddenly fallen and how the Chinese Chamber of Commerce had suddenly collapsed. So many things had happened in just one Las Vegas.

Hayson finally found out who caused all this to happen.

It was Jiang Ning!

Jiang Ning had gone to Las Vegas and created such a ruckus. This fellow was really nothing but trouble.

Hayson was now seated on the couch of a friend's office. He didn't say anything and just smoked while pulling a long face.

"You'd better tell us where that Lin Group really comes from. They could actually poach people from your company so blatantly! Hayson, don't tell me your company is secretly supporting Lin Group?"

"Exactly! The Lee family in Korea has given their support, while Tescon has given them their best experts. I wouldn't believe it even if you said that you're not backing Lin Group."

"Or are the Haysons headed in a new direction and are hoping to enter the Chinese market? We've tried that before and it didn't work."

The few of them sat in the office and teased

NH

Hayson without bothering to hide the mocking in their voices.

All of them were well known in Silicon Valley and were in control of all the latest technology in the world. Controlling all this tech was equivalent to being in control of tremendous wealth that would never cease to come rolling in!

They were even in control of the operations of other countries!

They had no regard for anyone else because they didn't think anybody could possibly pose a threat to them at all.

Hayson looked at them and just scoffed quietly.

“Tsk. Stop asking. I don't know either.”

He couldn't say too much and didn't want to either. These fellows were all very powerful and were all extremely greedy!

They weren't going to allow a Chinese business to climb all over their heads. They wouldn't even give such a chance away.

“It looks like Lin Group has the support of the Haysons after all. It's fine if you don't want to admit it, but you can't blame us if we start attacking you guys.”

“Exactly. You guys are the ones who refuse to acknowledge it in the first place.”

“I've already got news that Lin Group has set up

NH

their R&D lab and they're also putting the supply chain together, so they're acting really fast."

"We'd better watch them more carefully and make sure we don't miss what they do next."

Hayson couldn't help but laugh coldly inside when he watched how all the others in the office talked about dealing with Lin Group and how to split the spoils after taking Lin Group down.

He didn't acknowledge anything because Lin Group really didn't belong to his family. There was no way either himself or even his family could possibly make that man work for them!

All these supposed friends sitting in front of him were all competitors in the same industry. They had fought each other for many years now, and Hayson was more than happy to watch them go down.

These fellows were thinking of provoking that fellow? Not bad! Not a bad idea at all!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

“That Lin Group doesn’t have anything to do with the Haysons,” said Hayson as he glanced at the rest in the office. “I’m just following my family’s orders and I don’t care about anything you guys say or whether anything embarrassing has happened or not.”

He scoffed and refused to speak after that.

The rest of them didn’t believe him and just felt that Hayson was just trying to find excuses for himself. Everyone knew that Tescon had earned so much money thanks to experts in the company like Luo Lin.

Now that Luo Lin had been taken away, something bad must have happened to Tescon. Hayson said it didn’t matter, but there was no way to hide this sort of thing for long.

But they weren’t interested in doing anything to the Haysons now.

They were more interested in the experts that Lin Group had snatched away from Silicon Valley as well as Lin Group itself.

They were going to snatch these people away by force!

These factions of power were best at plundering, and tried their best to gain more resources for themselves.

They used the tremendous amount of wealth they had as well as the highly skilled fighters on hand to get anything they wanted. It had been this way

NH

for the past century.

And now, things were still the same.

They didn't care about Hayson anymore and treated him like air. They even started making plans in front of Hayson about how they were going to get what they wanted from Lin Group.

Hayson sat in a corner quietly and didn't have much expression on his face, and looked like he was in a foul mood.

But he was laughing coldly at them in his heart.

"I hope you guys can be a little greedier. I don't dare to provoke that Jiang Ning, but I can send all of you to him!"

.....

It was now past midnight in Donghai.

Jiang Ning was still awake.

Fei was smoking quietly outside the bungalow and was afraid to make any noise that might wake the household up.

"Mount Zhongnan is pretty much settled. Fang Qiu has matured very quickly, and all the reclusive clans are just taking a rest to recuperate." Fei exhaled a mouthful of smoke. "They know that even if they got their hands on a page of the manual, they're too weak to get anything. Besides, the Fang clan is in charge and you're the one backing them."

NH

“Clever people would make clever decision. I think you could merge them into the Extreme Martial Arts Academy.”

Fei's eyes were bright as they sparkled in the dim light of the night.

“It's not time yet,” said Jiang Ning. “We're now in the best position. The reclusive clans haven't completely put aside their pride yet, so it's not time yet.”

“But things are completely different in the Third World now.” Fei frowned slightly. “I just got news that someone is taking action, and I'm afraid that it's Fang Yin. He might have found some Third World power and is trying to use it to his benefit.”

There were still no clues about where the last two pages of the manual was.

But everyone around Jiang Ning was still working on it.

Lin Group used their business expansion to increase their influence and information channels, and Butler Zhao was also managing that massive information network of his.

Professor Lu was also continuing his research with nearly no food and sleep, while Fang Qiu was leading the eight reclusive clans in consolidating all the information that they held.

All of this was done in hope of unraveling the secret that lay behind the manual pages. Once he got hold of the last two pages, Jiang Ning was

NH

sure that everything would be revealed!


“We’ll just watch and wait,” said Jiang Ning. “I intend to leave the eight reclusive clans to Fang Qiu to control. This is a long term plan as well as a good test for him.”

He couldn’t possibly be with Fang Qiu all the time, just like how He Daoren couldn’t stand behind him all the time anymore.

Jiang Ning reached a hand out and Fei hesitated as he took a glance upstairs.

“Are you sure you can smoke?”

Jiang Ning slapped Fei on the shoulder and his gaze sharpened. “I’m not asking for a cigarette!”

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Jiang Ning's gaze immediately sharpened as he stared at a very faint lipstick mark on Fei's neck.

"What's this?"

"What the hell! Big Boss, that's not very nice of you to ask!"

Fei's expression immediately changed. He started to panic and flail about as he took several steps back.

They were supposed to be discussing serious matters here! He couldn't believe Jiang Ning spotted the kiss mark on his neck in this darkness.

"I won't disturb you guys anymore, gotta go!" Fei immediately scrambled off and disappeared within seconds.

"This little punk." Jiang Ning was so amused.

He went upstairs to find that the bedroom lights were on. Lin Yuzhen was awake and leaned against the headboard of the bed.

"Was that Fei?"

"Yup." Jiang Ning got into bed and held Lin Yuzhen gently. "He spoke too loudly and woke you up?"

"Nah. I wanted to hug you but realized you weren't here for me to hug, so I woke up."

"When are you going over?"

NH

She looked at Jiang Ning and her long eyelashes fluttered.

“Probably in another two days,” replied Jiang Ning. “You don’t have to worry about Donghai. This place is safe with those people in the martial arts academy, and you can just look for Yuming if you need anything.”

“I won’t be worried about those things. Once you go over, you must be careful. If you miss me, just give me a call.”

She leaned on Jiang Ning’s chest and didn’t say anymore even though she was still terribly worried.

She believed that there was nothing Jiang Ning wanted to do and couldn’t do.

“I will. Go to bed.”

Jiang Ning pulled Lin Yuzhen into his arms. He knew that she slept the most soundly while lying in his arms.

She would be able to sleep even though an imminent storm was already brewing out there!

In the Middle East.

This was a very peculiar place.

There were many mines here with many valuable ores which attracted the attention of many powerful people in the world. This place was in chaos because everyone was fighting for all these

NH

resources.

But none of these big shots would come here personally. All of them cleverly just supported their representatives in this region.

Mercenary army after mercenary army sprouted like young shoots after the rain as they all fought for their own territory in order to gain control over all those precious resources.

Doing business here was a matter of life and death!

Li Zhengshang and his son had brought all the money they made from selling off everything in the family and came to the Middle East.

Nobody would come here willingly, but this was the chance that Jiang Ning gave them, and it was the only chance they had!

They had considered taking the money and running off to a place where Jiang Ning couldn't find them and start all over again, but was there a place in this world where Jiang Ning wouldn't be able to find them?

The more they interacted with Jiang Ning, the more they understood about him. They knew that this idea was completely impossible.

At the same time, while this was a risky venture, it was still an opportunity for them. Risk and opportunity had always gone hand in hand with each other.

NH

One could find opportunities in a crisis, so the Li family had a chance to make a comeback and become even more powerful than they used to be!

Right now.,

The small mercenary army that the Li family had established was gaining fame within Saudi Arabia.

It wasn't only because the Li family paid them well, but because of the way the Li family treated them. They cared for every soldier in the army!

In this region, human lives were worth less than grass!

But the Li family cared a lot about their own mercenary soldiers. They never treated them as merely tools, but actually treated them like their own family.

Li Zhengshang was very clever and knew how to change his tactics according to where he was in order to expand.

He had learnt all this from Jiang Ning.

"Dad, I'm afraid we can't keep this under wraps for long." Li Genhong's expression was worried.

"People have been watching us, so it won't take long for someone else to discover that place, and things will get tricky if that happens!"

"When...when is Mr Jiang coming over?"

NH

It was hard for Li Genhong not to worry.

He had been watching over that silica mine very cautiously. He didn't dare to do it too obviously because he didn't want others to notice it, but he didn't dare to move too far away because he didn't want to lose his current control over the area.

They were a new power in the region, and even though they weren't very powerful, others had their eye on them because they operated differently.

They had gone through several conflicts both openly and covertly, and Li Genhong was still fearful when he thought about the few dangerous incidents that happened earlier.

He used to be a spoilt brat who only knew how to enjoy life. He had never been placed in such a situation before.

Being tense for such a long time in these awful conditions was driving him mad.

"I've already sent him news, so he will make arrangements when he wants to come over. We can't ask him too much," Li Zhengshang shook his head.

His respect for Jiang Ning had grown very deep now.

After coming to the Middle East, he often started thinking about what sort of person Jiang Ning was, and the more he thought about it, the more

NH

complicated he realized Jiang Ning was.

Lin Group went from being just a company in a small city to a multinational conglomerate in less than one year!

Who could achieve something like that?

Even if they were backed by someone with deep pockets or even one of the Third World powers, that was still no easy feat.

But Lin Group had risen just like that, and the entire process seemed effortless.

The more frightening part was that city of Donghai!

It was truly a forbidden territory!

“Mr Jiang is wise man, so he will do what needs to be done at the appropriate time and make arrangements accordingly. We must not interfere or try to influence him otherwise.”

“Dad, I think that you’re a little too reverent towards him.” Li Genhong was still a little indignant about the whole thing. “It’s true that we’ve offended him in the past, but since he’s sent us to this awful place and we’ve done what he wants, we should be even by now, right?”

He hoped to make a comeback and rebuild the Li family.

He wanted to get everything that he had lost through his own stupidity back!

NH

“You’re not thinking straight!” Li Zhengshang immediately frowned and shouted angrily, “Don’t you know what situation you’re in? How could you still say something like that?”

“Didn’t I tell you before that this is our last chance?” he shouted coldly. Li Genhong immediately shut his mouth.

“One must always know how to grab hold of opportunities. The reason why the Li family had risen in the past was because we had grabbed hold of the Chinese merchants that expanded overseas, but that was the wrong chance to grab!”

“Even if Mr Jiang didn’t teach us a lesson, someone else would! And if that happened, we might end up paying an even high price!” Li Zhengshang spoke very seriously, “Can’t you see what Mr Jiang is really trying to do?”

Li Genhong opened his mouth and wanted to say that he really couldn’t see what Jiang Ning was doing at all, but he didn’t dare to say anything.

He was definitely nowhere near Li Zhengshang’s level of foresight nor scheming, and was just indignant.

“Did you think he sent us here just because this was the most chaotic and dangerous place in the world?”

“Isn’t that so?” mumbled Li Genhong softly.

It was almost impossible to get a good sleep at night in this place at all. There was no telling

NH

when a war might suddenly break out or when someone might suddenly die.

Living in fear every single day really made him very high strung.

“You’re wrong,” Li Zhengshang scoffed. “This place is filled with treasures!”

His eyes were gleaming and sparkled with an intelligence that surpassed Li Genhong’s.

If he couldn’t figure this out after living on this earth for so many decades, then he had lived his life in vain!

“Just that place we discovered...” Li Zhengshang glanced around and dropped his voice to a whisper, “Do you know what significance it has?”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Li Genhong shook his head.

He had thought about it, but he still didn't get it.

"I've already gotten news that Lin Group has established a new R&D lab, and they're going into high technology, and integrated circuits in particular. Also, they've already poached a few extremely important experts in this area from Silicon Valley!" Li Zhengshang took a deep breath and asked, "Do you know what that means?"

After hearing his father ask this question again, even Li Genhong got it now.

His mouth gaped open and his eyes were filled with disbelief. He simply couldn't believe that Lin Group would expand into such an industry. He couldn't link this to the Lin Group he remembered.

"Someone like Mr Jiang is truly admirable!" said Li Zhengshang very sincerely.

The Chinese Chamber of Commerce he set up in the past had oppressed and exploited his fellow countrymen. This path was the wrong one to take and he understood this clearly now.

Jiang Ning was the one who helped him to see this.

They were all fellow Chinese, so they ought to stand united!

Jiang Ning did everything he could to protect fellow Chinese businesses, because helping and supporting them overseas was the same as

NH

helping their own country to become more powerful.

And now, they were going into integrated circuits, an industry that was practically monopolized by a foreign country. Why were they doing this?

If Li Genhong still couldn't see where Jiang Ning was going with this, he must be really stupid!

"I get it now." Li Genhong's body trembled slightly and even his voice didn't sound the same.

If he used to be fearful of Jiang Ning, then now, this fear carried some respect!

"This is a chance for us not only to redeem ourselves, but to also make a tremendous contribution!" Li Zhengshang looked at his son and sighed. "I'm almost at the end of my road, but you're still young and you must not continue going down the wrong path. You must get onto the right path."

"If you can continue to remain by Jiang Ning and work for him, then I won't worry about the future of the Li family."

Li Genhong didn't say anything.

He didn't have a good impression of Jiang Ning, since Jiang Ning nearly slapped him to death back then. And now his father wanted him to remain by Jiang Ning's side and work for him?

How was this possible?

NH

“What you need to do now is to gain Jiang Ning’s trust so that he will give you this chance. This is also a chance for the Li family, do you understand?”

Li Zhengshang knew exactly what his son was thinking about.

He grabbed Li Genhong’s shoulders and shook him hard. “I can still help you now and I will do everything I can to help you. This is our chance, and it’s our only chance, so you must stay alert at all times!”

“Yes, Dad!” shouted Li Genhong with all his might.

Their only chance...

This was their only chance!

Suddenly, he felt an invisible pressure weigh on his heart in that instant, and he felt very heavy inside.

It was as if he suddenly had an aim and direction in life.

“Mr Li!” Suddenly, someone came running in from outside with a pale face. “They’re here again!”

Li Genhong paled while Li Zhengshang’s expression remained steady. He waved his hands to tell them to remain calm.

“No need to be too worried, I’ll handle this. Genhong, just do what you need to do and leave the rest to me.”

NH

“But Dad...”


“Don’t worry, they’re all clever people. As long as they’re not entirely sure about us, they wouldn’t dare to do anything rash,” said Li Zhengshang. “We just need to stall for time until Mr Jiang arrives.”

“Once Mr Jiang is here, there will be no more problems!”

Stall for time!

They had to stall for time!

Once they managed to stall until Jiang Ning arrived, then they wouldn’t have to worry about anything!

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Having an elder at home was akin to having a treasure at home. At least Li Zhengshang was able to keep everyone calm.

Li Genhong nodded. "Got it."

He then walked out of the back door instead of the front door while Li Zhengshang got himself mentally prepared. "Let them come in."

In no time, several muscular dark skinned men walked in.

All of them were wearing the same uniform, and it was obvious that they were from the same mercenary army.

And they were from an army that was pretty famous in the area.

"Hello Mr Li, we meet again." Li Zhengshang's guest smiled and was rather polite as he stretched a hand out to shake Li Zhengshang's. "I'm so sorry for suddenly paying you a visit."

Li Zhengshang smiled back, but he could tell that these men weren't apologetic at all.

They couldn't even be bothered to be polite at all!

There were knives hiding in those smiles of theirs.

"I wouldn't say that a visit from Mr Halen is considered a disturbance. We're all friends, so it's only right for me to be polite." Li Zhengshang gestured towards a chair. "Please have a seat. Get us tea, please!"

NH

Even though he had come to a place torn apart by war and strife, he still had some basic manners. Serving his guests tea was a practice that Li Zhengshang maintained.

The fragrance of tea filled the room, but it was obvious that Halen wasn't interested in tea. He just casually took a sip and put the teacup back down.

"Mr Li, I'm sure you know why I'm here. Have you thought about my previous proposition?" Halen looked at Li Zhengshang. "In a place like this, a tiny outfit like yours might disappear overnight. So why not join us? You'll still be leading your men, and our lieutenant will certainly give you a high position!"

"With us protecting you, you will be able to expand your own sphere of influence without anyone else getting in the way. Isn't that a good idea?"

Li Zhengshang just smiled and didn't say anything.

He picked up his teacup and took a slight whiff of the tea. His movements were elegant and leisurely.

It was as if he hadn't heard a single thing Halen said at all.

"Mr Halen, tea needs to be slowly savored and tasted carefully," he said calmly. "One should smell the tea before drinking, then feel the sweetness after drinking."

NH

Halen frowned slightly and started getting impatient. He didn't like drinking tea and felt that downing a bottle of vodka was more enjoyable.

"Mr Li, I don't like to drink tea," Halen went straight to the point.

"But we're people who drink tea," smiled Li Zhengshang. "I like to drink tea, but you don't, and I suppose your lieutenant doesn't either, right? How are we going to work together?"

Halen tried to suppress his anger.

"Mr Li, have you ever thought about how you can continue living in peace under such conditions?"

"I already thought about it before coming here. And I'm 100% confident that I can continue living here peacefully." Li Zhengshang did not lower himself, and didn't give in at all either.

This wasn't Halen's first visit here. In fact, this was already the third time, and Halen's attitude was more aggressive now compared to the last two times. He had already lost all patience in speaking to Li Zhengshang by now.

Halen was from the Purple Moon Mercenary Army, and was a highly skilled fighter under his lieutenant!

Halen had come because he wanted to take in everyone that Li Zhengshang had and also to take away everything that Li Zhengshang had spent time and effort fighting for in order to fortify his own army. There was no way Li Zhengshang was

NH

letting him have all this so easily.

“Mr Li!” Halen stood up. “The Chinese have a saying about how the sincere person makes three calls. This is my third visit here already, so aren't you going to consider my proposition seriously?”

“Hoho, Mr Halen, I really can't consider it at all because it's not up to me to decide.” Li Zhengshang sat in his chair and smiled. “My boss is not agreeable.”

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

There was suddenly a tinge of respect on Li Zhengshang's face when he said these words.

Halen's heart trembled when he saw that clearly reverent attitude and look in Li Zhengshang's eyes.

"Your boss?" Halen frowned deeply. He had always been worried that there was someone backing Li Zhengshang.

Since this man dared to come here and form his own mercenary army, there was no way he didn't have someone backing him.

Li Zhengshang hadn't come here for very long, but he seemed very confident and had managed to amass a decent sized army for himself in a short time. He even declared that he would treat the soldiers as his own family, and gathered a lot of support from the men as a result.

This was spoiling the market for the rest of the mercenary armies. After all, these soldiers were just tools, and they were supposed to sacrifice their lives when necessary since they had been paid to do exactly that!

Dying at someone else's hands was only to be expected, but Li Zhengshang seemed to cherish every single life that worked for him.

"That's right. My boss has instructed me to come here, and everything I've done is according to his instructions, so I wouldn't dare to simply make any decisions on his behalf." Li Zhengshang smiled. "Nobody has ever been able to force my

NH

boss to make any decision, including myself.”

The implied meaning of his words was very clear. ‘Nobody’ also included Halen and his Purple Moon Mercenary Army!

Halen’s expression darkened, but he did not blow up.

He had been worried that Li Zhengshang had a backer, and that this backer was someone that should not be trifled with.

If the backer turned out to be someone powerful in the Third World, then things would get tricky. Nobody wanted unnecessary trouble, and they all worked very hard here because they were just trying to strike it rich in this region.

When he saw the expression, attitude and the gleam in Li Zhengshang’s eyes, Halen didn’t dare to continue asking.

“Is that so? In that case, I can’t force you then. Do you know when your boss would be coming here?” He paused before continuing, “My lieutenant would like to invite him over for a visit.”

His lieutenant didn’t know anything, but Halen just made this up on the spot.

“No idea,” Li Zhengshang continued to smile. “As I said, I can’t interfere in my boss’ business and I can’t influence him in any way. He comes when he wants to, and nobody can force him to come if he doesn’t want to.”

NH

Li Zhengshang had such a glib tongue and weaseled his way out of this situation so easily. Halen couldn't get him to promise anything at all.

"Hoho, fine, I get it." Halen scoffed. "I won't disturb you anymore then! Let's go!"

He then left with his men.

After everyone had left, Li Zhengshang breathed a sigh of relief and relaxed.

He felt very stressed when faced with a highly skilled fighter like Halen. He was afraid that Halen might suddenly lose his temper and suddenly decide to attack him. His men might not be able to hold Halen back at all.

"We're not going to hold up for long," Li Zhengshang laughed bitterly as he shook his head. "Mr Jiang, if you don't come soon, then I don't know what to do if Halen comes round again."

He was now pretending that he was very formidable when he wasn't. Halen was wary precisely because he didn't have sufficient information about the Li family.

But people as powerful as Halen definitely had the means to find out everything about himself. Once they found out what happened in Las Vegas, then Li Zhengshang wouldn't be able to hide anything from them anymore.

When that happened, nothing Li Zhengshang said would be of any use. Once Halen was no longer

NH

wary of him, Halen would definitely attack him and take everything away by force.

Then he would really be in trouble.

Li Zhengshang sat in his chair and looked into the distance as his heart pounded more and more quickly.

Ever since he came here, he had never had a good night's rest. He was always worried that one day, he would fall asleep and never wake up again.

This pressurizing feeling was getting stronger and stronger now.

The feeling of being in danger was getting more and more suffocating.

He and his son were going to break down soon!

Jiang Ning had to come quickly!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Li Zhengshang felt the pressure of this region the most.

His intentions were very simple. He just wanted to pave the road for Li Genhong's future while he was still able to, and this road was a life of following Jiang Ning!

This was the best chance that the Li family had, and he didn't want his son to miss it.

Li Zhengshang sat in his chair and exhaled deeply as the feeling of exhaustion immediately overtook his heart.

But he didn't dare to rest. He didn't dare to even let his guard down one tiny bit.

In this sort of place, one had to constantly be vigilant and alert. If you weren't careful enough, you wouldn't just lose money or status, but you might also lose your life.

And now, someone had their eye on them. The Purple Moon Mercenary Army weren't people to be trifled with.

After Halen left Li Zhengshang's, his expression was rather nasty.

This was already his third visit to Li Zhengshang, so he had been kind enough already.

If he wasn't wary of Li Zhengshang's backer, he would have lost his patience a long time ago.

But that was also why he kept testing the waters

NH

and sounding Li Zhengshang out. Now that Li Zhengshang said that his boss was disagreeable, Halen was even more wary than before.

“Halen, what should we do? This Li family is not simple, and their backer might be even more powerful!”

“That’s right. The lieutenant has said that we must not allow any threats to grow around us. Even though these people aren’t a threat at the moment, if we don’t swallow them up now, they’ll eventually spell trouble later.”

“They’re not advancing very quickly, but the way they operate makes all of us very pissed off and the lieutenant is very upset about it too.”

The few men with Halen raised their concerns.

Halen didn’t say anything and just frowned. He was still trying to figure out if Li Zhengshang was just pretending to be formidable or not.

He had already checked and made sure that no big shot had arrived recently.

Everyone in the Third World more or less found their own place already, so they wouldn’t wait till now to take action. The resources had already been distributed, so surely none of them was crazy enough to attempt snatching resources from someone else, right?

“We’ll go back first!” Halen snorted before smiling coldly. “I’ve already sent someone to investigate this father and son, so I should get the report

NH

soon.”

The car sped off and sent sand flying in all directions.

Halen and his men went back to their camp and he returned to his own office.

The phone started ringing the moment he sat down.

“Lieutenant!” He immediately stood up again and he had a respectful expression on his face. “Yes! Yes! I’ve gone over and that Li is really a wily old fox. It’s hard to tell when he’s lying and when he’s not, so it’s a bit tricky.”

“I’ve already gotten someone to investigate and I’ll know the results soon. Once I confirm my guess is right, I’ll take action immediately!”

Halen’s expression darkened even further after hanging up.

He had dragged this on for too long, so he just got a scolding from his superior. If Li Zhengshang turned out to be lying to him, he was going to teach this father and son a good lesson!

What boss?

He didn’t think they had a boss.

And even if they did, so what?

The more Halen thought about it, the angrier he got. The Purple Moon Mercenary Army was the

NH

most powerful army in this region, so there was no way they would allow any threat around them to exist.

He had no regard for those other tiny mercenary armies, since they learnt to manage their troops the same way that Purple Moon Mercenary Army did and were clearly of no threat to him.

But the way the Li family operated made Halen very uncomfortable.

He sat down and pulled out a can of beer from the fridge. He pulled the tab back and chugged the beer down.

He made a phone call after chugging the beer. It had been half a month already, so if he still didn't get any useful clues, he was going to kill someone soon!

It took a long time before the other party picked up the call, and his voice was lazy.

“Yes, yes, I know you're anxious. I've been investigating them all this while, and I have some information on hand now.”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

“So if I didn’t call you today, you wouldn’t have told me about this?” Halen was pissed off. “Spit it out now! Where does that father and son come from, and who’s backing them?”

“Nobody’s backing them,” the voice over the phone remained lazy. “There’s nothing to investigate. These two are just ordinary businessmen and had some businesses in Las Vegas before this.”

“Are you serious?”

“Believe me, I’m a professional.”

Halen’s expression slowly darkened. “Are they backed by anybody powerful? Could it be one of those terrifying powers from the Third World?”

“Halen, Halen, when were you ever this dumb? Which Third World power doesn’t already have a hand in your region? Why would they wait till now? Stop daydreaming.”

“I’ve already sent you the information you want, you can slowly read through everything. I’m going to bed, don’t call me again.”

Then the other party hung up.

Halen was so angry, his face was darker than the night.

BAM!

He slammed a fist on the desk and a crack appeared in the desk. It looked like it was going to

NH

fall apart soon.

“You two! How dare you!!” Halen roared angrily.

This was the first time he had been played out like this.

What boss? This fellow was really good at putting up an act!

The more he thought about it, the angrier he got. Once he thought about how real that look on Li Zhengshang’s face was, only for everything to turn out to be nothing but lies, Halen nearly exploded.

“Men!” Halen gave a shout and his trusted subordinates came running in.

“How many soldiers does the Li family have now?”

“Fewer than 300!”

“Check what are their major businesses!” Halen snorted coldly. “Since you don’t want to come under my wing, then prepare to disappear!”

“I’m going to turn everything you have to dust!”

He clenched his fists and a violence seeped out from his eyes. The intensity of that violence looked like it could crush everything in his way.

“Mr Halen, his son, Li Genhong, keeps going to the west recently but doesn’t bring a lot of people with him each time, and I don’t know what he’s

NH

trying to do,” said one of the men. “He looks rather nonchalant, but yet careful at the same time. This young fellow can’t hide his emotions.”

Halen narrowed his eyes upon hearing this. “He’s going to the west? What’s there in the west?”

The western part was considered wasteland. This place was covered in desert, so if the west was considered wasteland in such a place, then it was very strange indeed for Li Genhong to keep going there.

“Apparently he wants to take over a piece of land and turn it into a training camp.”

Halen laughed coldly.

The land here wasn’t worth much. There was plenty of uninhabited land everywhere.

The sand and rocks on the ground were commonplace, so nobody would care about them.

But Halen was very sensitive about everything this father and son did, especially a youngster like Li Genhong, since he couldn’t hide his emotions as well as his wily father.

“Humph! Watch him closely!” said Halen. “I’ll give you one day to investigate this carefully. The rest of you, make preparations! Once we can confirm our target, then we can launch an attack and make sure we pummel them to dust!”

Those who obeyed would live, and those who rebelled would die!

NH

Anybody that could possibly be a threat had to be blown to smithereens!

Moreover, this father and son had actually played Halen out and caused him to embarrass himself in front of the lieutenant. If others found out that Halen had been convinced by a pair of swindlers, then Halen would have trouble walking with his head up high.

“Yes, sir! We will make preparations right now and wait for your orders to crush them underfoot!”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Nobody liked the feeling of being lied to, especially since the Li family was actually a bunch of people that Halen could have crushed with just one finger.

Of course Halen was in a terrible mood.

He was going to fully investigate Li Zhengshang and his son so that he could snatch away every single thing they had right before their very eyes.

That included the mercenary soldiers they controlled right now!

Meanwhile.

Li Genhong's emotions were rather complex right now.

When he came to this chaotic region, he wasn't just terrified, but also very lost.

If Li Zhengshang hadn't been holding the fort all this while, Li Genhong would never have held up till today.

But now, Li Zhengshang said that he was going to pass the future of the Li family onto Li Genhong.

He had also told him the direction and path he was to take in the future, but Li Genhong still found it difficult to accept.

"Do I have to gain Jiang Ning's favor?" Li Genhong grit his teeth.

When he thought about how powerful and

NH

terrifying Jiang Ning was, he started to feel fearful.

He wasn't confident of gaining Jiang Ning's trust. After all, he had offended Jiang Ning before.

"Young Master Li, it's hard to develop the wasteland over there. Do you want to mark it anyway?" asked someone from behind him.

Li Genhong turned and took a glance. That hill at the back was now the one thing that he and his father were counting on now!

No matter what happened, they had to hang on to control over this area, but they had to make sure they weren't too loud or obvious about it, otherwise other people would notice it.

"Mark it first, we'll talk about whether we want it at a later stage. Nobody wants it now, anyway," said Li Genhong.

This entire area was considered wasteland and wasn't worth anything since there was so much land available here.

But of course, that was partly because nobody had discovered its value.

The major mines in the east had already caused a huge fight between the mercenary armies, and they had gotten into a fierce battle several times now.

Many people were willing to die for money, so once something worth fighting over appeared, it

NH

would definitely attract a whole bunch of lunatics.

Li Genhong instructed his men to erect a signboard and mark this land as theirs, as well as tell others that this was going to be turned into a training camp. This was something that many other mercenary armies did, so it wouldn't look suspicious.

He stood there as his forehead was covered with perspiration. He wasn't sure if he was sweating profusely from the heat or from nervousness.

After making arrangements, Li Genhong left a few men to watch over the area and got ready to take his car back to his camp.

But before he could get into his car, a group of people suddenly appeared and surrounded him and his men.

"Who are you?" shouted Li Genhong fiercely.

He frowned and already knew who they were from the uniforms they were wearing. He was just surprised that the Purple Moon Mercenary Army had caught up with him so quickly.

"Young Master Li, don't bother struggling. These few men of yours are no match for us."

The leader of the assailants waved his hand and all the men behind him unlocked the safety catch on their guns.

KA KA KA!

NH

Li Genhong's face instantly paled.

"Isn't Mr Halen trying to talk to us about a partnership? Have you checked with him before doing this?" he growled, and the mercenary soldiers next to him also raised their firearms and pointed them at the other side.

But the difference in numbers clearly showed that if they got into a fight, Li Genhong's side was definitely going to die.

"Hoho, I'm here on Mr Halen's instructions! How long more do you and your father want to pretend? Stop trying to fool us!" The leader snorted coldly and said, "Young Master Li, you'd better follow us back. Mind you, bullets don't have eyes!"

Li Genhong's heart sank. Had they already been exposed?

How did these guys appear so quickly?

His men wanted to retaliate and they glanced at Li Genhong to show that they were ready, but Li Genhong shook his head.

"Don't do anything. If we get into fight, all of you are going to die." He took a deep breath. "I'll leave with them."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Li Genhong looked at the leader of the assailants and said, "I'll leave with you, do not hurt my men. Since you didn't kill me right away, it means you want me alive. So if you kill any of my men, I'll kill myself immediately!"

Then he pulled a knife out from his belt and put it against his own neck.

"Hoho, so the rumors are true – you and your father really have too much respect for these mercenary soldiers. Well, whatever, I don't care. I don't want to waste bullets on these pieces of trash either anyway."

He waved his hand and a few jeeps drove over.

"Young Master Li, this way please."

"Young Master Li!"

"Young Master Li, let us fight it out with them!"

"Let go of Young Master Li!"

Li Genhong's men started shouting away.

Li Genhong shook his head. "All of you, guard this place. This will become the training ground for the Li family, so we'll definitely need this land." Then he got into the jeep.

The leader of the Purple Moon Mercenary Army soldiers only glanced at the Li family soldiers disdainfully before driving off without doing anything to them.

NH

He couldn't be bothered with these pieces of trash.

Once Halen had wiped out everything that the Li family owned here, he would come back and deal with these fellows!

The jeeps drove off in the direction of Halen's camp.

They were going to use Li Genhong to threaten Li Zhengshang!

"Young Master Li, Mr Halen is furious that you've kept him in the dark for so long, and the lieutenant is also very angry. Do you know what are the consequences of doing this?"

Li Genhong remained expressionless.

"How have I kept any of you in the dark?"

"I just know that you have to pay the price for offending me like this," said Li Genhong very calmly.

"Still trying to pretend?" The leader laughed coldly and shook his head. "You can stop pretending now! We've already investigated you and your father, and you don't have the backing of anyone powerful at all! But you two actually dared to venture out here!"

"The two of you are going to end up..."

SCREEECH!

NH

The car braked suddenly and the leader didn't catch himself in time, so his head hit the window hard and he started cursing immediately.

"What the hell is going on?!"

"Team Leader, there's someone in front," reported one of his men.

"Who the hell is courting death?!" The leader looked out, then flung the door open as he pulled a gun out with his face filled with murder.

When Li Genhong saw the person standing outside the car, he nearly forgot to breathe.

"Am I...am I imagining things?"

"Who the hell do you think you are? How dare you block us?!"

SWOOSH!

Just after the leader spoke, there was a loud bang and blood spurted everywhere.

The leader's head had turned to mush.

Jiang Ning stood where he was with no expression on his face. He wiggled his finger as he eyed the others in the jeeps.

All the car doors opened instantly and five or six of them jumped out immediately.

But in the blink of an eye!

NH

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

All the men who stepped out of the jeeps were dead.

The air stood still and only the sound of those fatal punches echoed.

A sniper!

There must be a sniper somewhere!

The remaining soldiers went into a panic and didn't dare to get out of their cars.

But how could this vast desert hide any sniper?

That was impossible!

"Let's go! Hurry up!" shouted one of them. But just as the driver was about to step on the accelerator, a hole appeared in the windshield and went right through the driver's head.

The blood from the driver's head sprayed all over the men sitting behind.

"AHH!!!"

All the men in this jeep were about to go mad.

Some of the other men got out of their cars, but the moment they set foot on the sand, they were

NH

killed. Everyone left in the cars had no choice but to duck obediently, because whoever stepped out was definitely going to die!

This was insane! What a frightening sniper!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

The air fell silent.

Even the wind seemed to have stopped blowing and there was no sound at all.

Li Genhong sat in the jeep with his eyes and mouth wide open, and his back was straight.

He didn't dare to move at all.

The two men who held him down and sat next to him in the jeep were both dead. Their heads had been shot and they were very dead.

He even felt the warmth of their blood on his face.

"He...he...he's...here..." Li Genhong's lips trembled.

These were mercenary soldiers!

If just the slightest mistake was made, then he would be the one dead by now.

His legs were weak and he couldn't move at all. He tried to get out of his seat but couldn't find the strength at all.

Li Genhong watched as Jiang Ning walked towards him steadily and the few surviving soldiers around him had all buried their faces between their legs, so nobody dared to move at all.

"You got into the wrong car." Jiang Ning walked up and looked at everyone else in the jeep. Nobody dared to look up at all.

NH

Everyone knew that if they looked up, they'd definitely die. There was a terrifying sniper who had his aim on them right now.

"Mr...Mr Jiang!" Li Genhong squeezed a smile out, but even his facial expression was stiff.

How terrifying!

He knew that Jiang Ning was terrifying, but he had no idea how many more terrifying people were by Jiang Ning's side!

"Get out of the car," said Jiang Ning calmly.

Then he turned and walked away.

Li Genhong stretched his arms out and tried his best to move his legs but accidentally stepped on someone's hand and made a loud noise. The soldiers immediately squeaked in fright and one of them couldn't help but look up.

BANG!

Then the same man collapsed again.

Nobody dared to say anything, and they didn't even dare to make any sound.

Li Genhong held his breath and tried to focus. His heart was already going to leap out of his mouth and he couldn't calm himself down at all.

He was afraid that these soldiers would suddenly attack him. He would be doomed if that happened!

NH

But nobody dared to even look up at all. They were so afraid to get killed.

He carefully alighted from the car and gulped. When he saw the dead bodies on the ground, he couldn't help but retch.

How cruel!

This world was just this cruel.

Especially in this region, where human lives were worth even less than grass.

He had no idea how he made it to Jiang Ning's car, but he just stood at the door and didn't dare to get in.

"Mr Jiang, you...you're here!"

"Uh huh. Get in." Jiang Ning sat in the car and looked Li Genhong up and down before nodding. "You've improved."

Li Genhong smiled awkwardly and didn't dare to say anything at all. He didn't know if it was a good thing or a bad thing to be complimented by Jiang Ning. He quickly climbed into the car and sat on the edge of his seat without daring to utter a sound.

Jiang Ning didn't say anything throughout the entire journey, so Li Genhong didn't dare to start any conversation either.

He was stiff and nervous because the terrifying image of what happened moments ago was still

NH

replaying vividly in his mind.

He had seen cruelty before, but he would never forget that horrifying scene he witnessed earlier!

Jiang Ning had used practical actions to show him that this place was way more terrifyingly cruel than he could even imagine.

The car drove quickly and headed towards the Li family's camp.

Once they reached the entrance, the soldiers immediately raised their weapons and aimed it at this unknown car.

"Stop! Stop!" Li Genhong immediately shouted and got out of the car as he waved at the soldiers. "It's me! Put your guns down right now!"

"Young Master Li!" shouted the soldiers at the entrance.

Li Genhong's face reddened as he ran back to the car and opened the car door and said politely, "Mr Jiang, we're here."

Jiang Ning got out of the car and glanced at the soldiers at the entrance. He turned back to Li Genhong and said, "Looks like they really listen to you around here."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

"I..." Li Genhong immediately tensed up and was afraid that Jiang Ning might misunderstand that he and his father was raising an army that would no longer be under Jiang Ning's control.

He was about to explain things when Jiang Ning raised a hand and didn't let him speak.

"This place was supposed to be under your control in the first place."

Jiang Ning then walked in while Li Genhong's eyes immediately reddened and his body started trembling because his breathing suddenly quickened.

What did Jiang Ning just say?

He wanted Li Zhengshang and Li Genhong to have control of this place?

That was giving the two of them a chance!

Li Genhong thought...

He took a deep breath and quickly caught up with Jiang Ning.

Just as the two of them reached the living room, Li Zhengshang walked out with an anxious and panicky look on his face.

The moment he saw Jiang Ning, the expression on his face went from frantic to surprise, then to utter shock and finally surprise.

"Mr Jiang! You...you're here!" He was practically

NH

jumping up and down and his voice even cracked a little. He was so excited that his hands were trembling. "That's wonderful! Wonderful! That's really wonderful!"

He walked towards Jiang Ning but those were the only words he could get out of his mouth.

He had just received a call from Halen to say that he had captured Li Genhong, so he had to either surrender everything he had or prepare to pick up Li Genhong's dead body instead.

Li Zhengshang went into a panic immediately. Even though he had gone through so much in life, the thought of his only son possibly getting killed still nearly made him lose his mind.

He walked over to Li Genhong and patted his shoulders hard with tears in his eyes. "I'm so glad you're alright, I thought..."

"Mr Jiang rescued me." Li Genhong proceeded to give a brief recount of what happened earlier.

Li Genhong had put it in simple words, but Li Zhengshang could imagine how scary and terrifying it must have been.

Jiang Ning stood where he was with no expression on his face, as if nothing had happened, and that the incident earlier wasn't anything to shout about.

"Mr Jiang, I won't say too many unnecessary words of thanks. From today onwards, both of our lives belong to you!" Li Zhengshang's expression

NH

was solemn as he clasped his hands together politely. “Mr Jiang, this way please!”

Before this, this father and son had no choice but to do whatever Jiang Ning told them to do. But now, the two of them were sincerely grateful to Jiang Ning.

It wasn't just because Jiang Ning had saved Li Genhong's life, but because of what Jiang Ning said earlier.

“This place was supposed to be under your control in the first place.”

Li Genhong couldn't stop replaying these words in his mind.

This was trust in him and his father.

In the living room.

Jiang Ning sat in the seat reserved for the highest position in the room as he gently held up a teacup and the smell of tea filled the room. This was his favorite tea and Li Zhengshang had prepared it beforehand.

“We're not in a good position right now. The Purple Moon Mercenary Army has their eye on us,” said Li Zhengshang. “Also, they should have found out everything about the two of us by now.”

His expression was grim and he looked very worried. After all, they were nowhere near what the Purple Moon Mercenary Army was capable of!

NH

The Li family only had around 300 men, while the Purple Moon Mercenary Army had more than a thousand soldiers!

The difference between them was too great!

If they really engaged in battle, the Li family couldn't possibly win, and definitely couldn't hold onto the mine they had discovered.

"Halen called me earlier and told me to surrender and to hand over everything because it belongs to him. Mr Jiang, what should we do?"

"Then we'll make them hand over everything because it belongs to us," replied Jiang Ning calmly.

Li Zhengshang froze and thought he had heard wrongly. Jiang Ning wanted to make the Purple Moon Mercenary Army belong to the Li family?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

“Mr Jiang...” Li Zhengshang hesitated for a moment because he wasn’t sure if he didn’t explain himself clearly enough or Jiang Ning misunderstood him. “They’re telling us to surrender to them.”

“That’s not right,” Jiang Ning shook his head. “I’ve made myself very clear. They should surrender to us.”

“That’s settled then. Give that...Halen a call, tell him that I’m giving him one day to surrender. If he doesn’t surrender, then I’ll make him disappear!”

His tone of voice was calm, but his words were murderous!

Jiang Ning was going to stir up trouble from the moment he arrived.

But...he didn’t seem to have brought many people along with him.

Li Genhong didn’t say anything. He knew that Jiang Ning definitely had another fighter with him. A super sniper!

The soldiers from the Purple Moon Mercenary Army had been wiped out by that terrifying sniper earlier.

But they only made the two of them.

The Purple Moon Mercenary Army had more than a thousand men!

Li Zhengshang was a little hesitant and didn’t

NH

know if Jiang Ning was kidding or not. According to his memory of Jiang Ning, this man wasn't one to joke around like that.

A big shot like Jiang Ning never played childish games.

But this was a chaotic place that was constantly embroiled in war!

Bullets didn't have eyes!

"Dad, let's just follow what Mr Jiang says." Li Genhong took a deep breath. "Since they offended us first, then we must not let them look down on us!"

"If you don't kill them today, then they'll kill you some other day!"

He became more and more agitated as he spoke, and the childishness he used to have disappeared in an instant. He now had a mature and bold look in his eyes after he had gotten over what happened earlier.

Li Zhengshang was rather surprised.

Li Genhong seemed to be completely different from the boy who had stepped out of the house just this morning.

Only a few hours had passed, but he had transformed completely.

He glanced at Li Genhong, then back at Jiang Ning before nodding vigorously. "Sure!"

NH

He took the phone and called Halen in front of Jiang Ning.

“Li Zhengshang!” Halen’s furious voice started shouting the moment the call went through.

It was clear that he was furious about how the men he sent to capture Li Genhong had been killed. “How dare you!”

“How dare YOU.” Li Zhengshang suppressed his anger. “Mr Halen, you actually dared to attack my son and demanded that I hand everything over to you. You’re really bold for offending my boss like that!”

Halen was about to hit the roof.

How could Li Zhengshang continue to pretend that he had some powerful backer at this point in time?

Did he think that Halen knew nothing about the Li family?

“Halen, I’m notifying you officially right now,” continued Li Zhengshang without waiting for a reply from Halen. “You have one day. Either surrender and hand everything you have over to us, otherwise, prepare to disappear off the face of this earth!”

Li Zhengshang hung up after saying those words.

It seemed like a domineering move, but Li Zhengshang’s hands were still trembling after he did that.

NH

He was now blatantly challenging Halen.

He was challenging the Purple Moon Mercenary Army, an army that was more than three times the size of his own army. He seemed to be courting death now.

If Jiang Ning weren't sitting in front of him right now, he would have thought he was drunk and spouting nonsense under the influence of alcohol.

"Mr Jiang, what if they don't surrender?" asked Li Zhengshang. "Do we prepare to fight?"

"There's no way they'll surrender." Jiang Ning nodded. "It's time to test your men to see if they're qualified to stay here or not."

Li Zhengshang and Li Genhong exchanged glances. They didn't know what Jiang Ning was trying to do.

When it came to the prowess of the soldiers, their soldiers were nothing compared to the soldiers that the Purple Moon Mercenary Army took in!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

The Purple Moon Mercenary Army had been around for several years with more than ten smaller troops with a hundred men in each troop. All of them had a lot of experience in the battlefield.

But the Li family hadn't formed their troop for long, and the people they got were mostly those who couldn't find any other troop to join.

Test their men? Li Zhengshang felt cold sweat drip down his head.

Halen wouldn't surrender, and even if he did, would the lieutenant surrender?

He would probably fly into a rage and then lead his men to trample all over him!

"Genhong, send orders out to get ready for a battle!" said Li Zhengshang hurriedly. "We're going to fight to the very death with the Purple Moon Mercenary Army!"

"Ok!" Li Genhong didn't dare to cause any delay and immediately ran out to send the orders out himself.

Jiang Ning continue to sit calmly in the living room as if none of this mattered and slowly sipped his tea.

Li Zhengshang stood to one side and didn't dare to ask too much, even though he had many doubts, worries and anxieties.

But since Jiang Ning was already sitting here, he

NH

couldn't ask!

On the other end of the line, Halen was furious!

BAM!

He swiped everything off his desk and everything smashed to pieces on the floor.

"Ridiculous! Ridiculous!" he roared. His eyes were about to spew fire.

He would never have thought that this could happen. He didn't manage to kidnap Li Genhong in order to threaten Li Zhengshang into surrendering everything, and he lost a good number of his men instead. And now, Li Zhengshang was warning him?!

"He wants us to surrender?" Halen laughed from being too angry. He had never heard such a terrible joke in his life!

"Giving us one day? What a joke! No army in this region dares to talk to us like that!"

Halen was trembling very violently and he wished he could go over and tear Li Zhengshang and his son to pieces right now!

If word of this got out, Halen's reputation would take a huge hit and the lieutenant was definitely going to punish him severely, because he had embarrassed the Purple Moon Mercenary Army deeply.

He was going to make Li Zhengshang and his son

NH

pay for humiliating him!

“Men! Get five troops together, we’ll destroy them tomorrow!” roared Halen.

Since he was only going to kill Li Zhengshang and his son, he didn’t need to mobilize everyone. Sending five troops was already too many to Halen.

He was sure that the Li family’s side would disappear from the face of the earth in less than an hour!

One day? Halen wasn’t going to care about that.

If not for the fact that the sun was setting, Halen would have rushed over to kill them right away.

The troops in the Purple Moon Mercenary Army gathered together and they were all filled with murder and great confidence in their hearts. They had no regard for the Li family and their troop at all.

If Halen wasn’t wary of a possible backer, he would have attacked them long ago.

Meanwhile, Li Genhong had sent out orders to prepare for a fight to the bitter end with the Purple Moon Mercenary Army, and a few dozen men immediately chose to back out.

Li Genhong was stunned by this reaction.

These were the men that they had paid so much to groom and train?

NH

These were the soldiers that they had cared for and valued all this time?

In less than two hours, more and more people left the troop. Some of them had some conscience and returned the money they had received, while some just secretly escaped!

By nightfall, they were only left with 200 men!

Li Zhengshang's face was pale and he felt like his heart was growing cold. Without an actual crisis, he wouldn't have known that all his hard work could go to waste so easily!

How were they going to fight the other side? This was as good as courting death!

By the next morning, there would be even fewer people left for sure.

"Mr Jiang..." Li Zhengshang's voice was a little hoarse. "I've let you down!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Li Zhengshang was rather pale.

He thought that he had done a good job. This new way of managing the troops was able to keep his men on his side and they would serve to protect him.

But when a real crisis hit, these assholes ran faster than anyone else!

"I didn't think that after they took the money I gave them, they..."

"This is the real situation." Jiang Ning remained calm, as if he had already predicted this.

"In this sort of place, human lives are worth less than grass. Your method wasn't wrong, but it was used on the wrong people." He glanced at Li Zhengshang and said calmly, "Don't be anxious. We'll get a result towards the end of the night."

Li Zhengshang's heart trembled. Towards the end of the night?

He looked at the time and saw that it was nearly 11PM. Would more people escape towards the end of the night?

"I'm going to kill them!" Li Zhengshang hit the roof.

Jiang Ning shook his head. "There's no need to keep those who don't want to stay. But those who stay can be groomed well."

"It's up to themselves to choose, not you."

NH

Jiang Ning was calm and collected, as if it didn't matter if all of Li Zhengshang's men ran away that very night.

In any case, he had never thought of relying on these men to fulfil what he wanted to do.

These men were far from his required standard.

Time ticked by slowly.

Li Zhengshang remained seated in the living room uneasily, while Jiang Ning closed his eyes slightly to rest, and didn't seem to care what happened next.

"We've lost another 16 men, they've escaped without leaving anything behind, and they even took some food with them." Li Genhong's expression was equally nasty.

He had already walked back in three times to do a headcount. Each time he counted, he would be missing another ten odd men. It was only 1AM now!

Their total numbers had been reduced to only around 130 men. All the men they hired were probably going to run by the end of the night!

The Purple Moon Mercenary Army would be sending their men over the next day to fight. How were they going to fight back?

A massacre was probably awaiting them now!

Li Zhengshang's limbs were all trembling and he

NH

felt like such a failure.

He thought that he could judge others' character well, but it was clear that he didn't know anything and he was just lying to himself.

He only had a hundred odd men now...there might be even fewer by the next morning. He was already on the losing end, but now things were getting worse. How was he going to fight this battle?

This was futility!

"Mr Jiang..." Li Zhengshang took a deep breath and wanted to tell Jiang Ning to leave now, otherwise it would be too difficult to leave by the time morning rolled around.

But just as he started speaking, Jiang Ning opened his eyes.

SWOOSH!

A figure appeared and stood behind Jiang Ning.

"It's about time," said Jiang Ning. "Let them take action."

"Yes, Big Boss." The figure disappeared immediately after that.

"Mr Jiang, that's..." Li Zhengshang's eyes trembled. He recognized that figure. That was Brother Gou, the man who always followed Jiang Ning around.

NH

He was surprised that Brother Gou was here too.

Suddenly, his heart trembled. If Brother Gou was here along with a grim reaper level sniper, then it meant that all the other fighters were probably here too!

Jiang Ning had come with a team of fighters!

“The Purple Moon Mercenary Army soldiers won’t come here tomorrow,” said Jiang Ning.

“They won’t be able to.”

KABOOM...

Li Zhengshang felt like he had been struck by lightning and he was feeling giddy now.

He could tell what Jiang Ning really meant. He meant that Halen and his men...were probably all going to die in the night!

“This test is targeted at your troop of mercenary soldiers,” said Jiang Ning as he looked at Li Zhengshang. “At the same time, it’s my first lesson to you about this warzone. Don’t talk to mercenary soldiers about loyalty!”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Li Zhengshang opened his mouth but couldn't get a single word out. He was utterly shocked and could only nod.

There was no point in talking to mercenary soldiers about loyalty, because they didn't care for this at all.

They only had eyes for money!

He finally understood why Jiang Ning allowed Li Genhong to tell their soldiers that they were going to fight a bitter war with the Purple Moon Mercenary Army.

It was a ploy to filter out those men who would run in times of trouble!

But many people would not have passed this test.

If everyone really made a run for it and the Purple Moon Mercenary Army came to attack, then that was as good as Li Zhengshang digging his own grave.

He would have been buried in no time!

But Jiang Ning wasn't going to let that sort of thing happen, because he was in control of the situation.

At the same time, he was in control of human nature.

Time continued to tick by and more people decided to leave, but the number of people leaving started to decrease. The remaining few

NH

were those with greater determination, more principled and with a greater sense of responsibility.

Since they had accepted payment, they had to stick to their paymasters to the very end, even if they might die in the battle the next day.

After some time, the number finally stabilized at just over a hundred men. Nearly two-thirds of the soldiers had run away!

That meant that Li Zhengshang's hard work before was just an illusion and didn't mean anything.

Li Zhengshang blamed himself for it, but he also knew that Jiang Ning was giving him a chance to make a mistake and correct it. And he also knew that this would be the only chance that Jiang Ning would give him!

Meanwhile.

At the Purple Moon Mercenary Army's campsite.

Halen was in high spirits. He was always in the best mood just before a battle!

The five troops were all ready to go. He was going to lead the men over first thing the next morning to trample Li Zhengshang and his men underfoot.

He was already having trouble controlling himself.

The sound of a woman moaning away in the room would arouse any man.

NH

“Attack! Attack!” shouted Halen furiously, and just at the most critical moment...

KABOOM!

There was a terrifyingly loud explosion outside and it was ear deafening.

Halen got a shock and shuddered violently. He felt like a deflated balloon now and didn't feel any more excitement.

He looked down but couldn't get it up anymore, and he became even more furious.

“What happened?! What's going on?!” shouted Halen as he pulled up his pants and was about to go out to take a look when another ground shattering explosion occurred.

BOOM!

BOOM!

BOOM!

Flames shot through the sky!

This was exactly the hour when everyone was sound asleep. Nobody expected to be secretly attacked in the night.

The terrifying blasts woke everyone up as flames lit up the entire campsite and struck fear in their hearts.

“Put out the fire! Put out the fire!”

NH

“Who did this?! Get them! Damn it!”

“Who did this?! Get them!!”

Everyone was in an uproar and it was utter chaos.

Some were rescuing others, some were trying to put out the fire, some were trying to locate the culprits. They were disorganized and disorderly, making the entire campsite even messier than it already was.

It took nearly an hour to get the fire under control. All of them were exhausted and covered in sweat, but they still couldn't catch the culprits.

“Increase the level of vigilance!”

“Troops One, Three and Five, get some rest! Two and Four shall take turns to patrol the place! If you find anybody suspicious, capture him and kill him on the spot!”

They had to fight a battle in the morning, so even though they didn't think much of Li Zhengshang's troop, they still had to conserve some energy for the fight anyway.

Far from the campsite.

Several men had been lying behind a hill motionless for a long time now.

“Who's going to set the second fire?” Brother Gou's voice was soft, but everyone could hear him. “Number Eight, I remember you love setting off fireworks the most?”

NH

Number Eight shook his butt a little as he sniggered.

“I liked to play with these things when I was a child, and now I love them even more as an adult!”

Those eyes were gleaming!

His eyes looked vicious with a tinge of excitement.

Brother Gou nodded. “Make sure they’re glorious! We’ll be watching!”

“Got it!”

With that, Number Eight disappeared into the darkness.

Brother Gou and the rest remained on the ground as they looked like part of the night. But their eyes were fixed on the Purple Moon Mercenary Army campsite a distance from them.

Twenty minutes later, the mercenary soldiers who were allowed to sleep had just shut their eyes and were going to catch up on as much sleep as possible.

Halen sat on the bed in his own room without any pants on as he continued to see if he could get it up again, but nothing worked.

After that terrible shock earlier, his body still couldn’t recover itself. Halen was going mad with fury!

NH

“Bloody hell! Which bloody asshole did this?! Why can’t we catch him at all?!!”

“If I catch hold of you, I’m going to make your life a living hell!”

He grit his teeth and his expression was livid and threatening. He looked at the woman kneeling by the side and yelled, “Come over here and think of something!”

It would be terrible if he still couldn’t get it up today.

All the lights were on within the campsite as men continued to patrol the area. They also made sure that more men guarded the food and ammunition storage areas.

Nobody dared to slack off.

“Keep a close watch, and make sure nothing happens! Otherwise, Mr Halen will kill you!”

The footsteps went by as Number Eight hid beneath the jeep without moving. He was barely even breathing.

He had infiltrated the camp for quite a while now, and was just waiting for everyone to relax their guard a little before taking action.

He was going to wait until most of them had gone into deep sleep so that he could scare them awake again. That would increase their exhaustion for sure!

NH

“It’s about time.” He calculated the time, chuckled to himself and tied the C4 bomb to the car before immediately setting the car’s route.

VRRRRROOOOM!

All of a sudden, the jeep came to life and the headlamps shone brightly!

It attracted the attention of several soldiers.

Number Eight couldn’t be bothered with those soldiers. He had already jammed a wooden bat against the accelerator and the steering wheel was also stuck in place. Once the engine was started, the jeep sped off and made its way towards the ammunition storage.

He continued to lie on the ground as the jeep drove off from above him, then he rolled to the side and disappeared into the darkness.

“Stop! Stop!!”

“Stop that car! Stop that car right now!”

DA DA DA!

Shots were fired, but there wasn’t anybody driving the car at all.

Nobody was able to stop the jeep in time, so they could only watch as it sent several soldiers flying as it drove towards the ammunition storage and...

BOOOOONMM!!

NH

There was an earth shattering blast that hurt everyone's ears.

Halen was just beginning to relax in his room when the blast went off and he went limp again. His expression turned livid and he was going to kill something soon.

“AHHHHHH!”

He was really going mad now.

“Who is it?! Who did this?!” roared Halen loudly as he dashed out and his eyes were red and bulging. “What's happened now? Find the person who did this! Find him!”

He was really going mad soon. He had been terribly shocked two times in a row, so nothing was going to work now.

Damn it!

But what made him even angrier was the fact that the ammunition storage had been blown up.

Fire blazed through the campsite again, and the three troops that had just fallen asleep were yelled awake again.

“Extinguish the fire! Extinguish the fires!!”

The campsite was thrown into chaos again.

Brother Gou looked at the flames shooting into the sky and nodded. “It's not bad, but not glorious enough.”

NH

This was a word that he learnt from the Legend of Shengcheng. It certainly made him sound smarter now.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

“Number Eight,” he turned to look at Number Eight all covered in dirt. “Damn it, why did you take so long? It’s already 4AM, so we can only do this one more time.”

“Then we’ll do one last really huge ass one!”

Their eyes gleamed and they couldn’t control their excitement as they looked out at the roaring fire in the campsite.

They didn’t have much time left, so they could only set fire to the campsite one last time. It was definitely more than enough to tire the soldiers out, but the wolves wanted to have more fun.

They knew that this last time would be even more difficult than the last two times. After going through this twice, the other party would become even more vigilant, and possibly decide to forgo sleep altogether.

That was the effect they wanted!

The wolves wanted to tire these people to death!

Time slowly ticked by.

The wolves weren’t in a hurry at all.

They watched as the fire in the campsite was slowly put out and the chaotic campsite slowly regained some order, but they still weren’t anxious.

“Wait for the signal,” said Brother Gou patiently.

NH

They were waiting for Fei's signal.

Jiang Ning's orders was to destroy these soldiers completely!

After being shocked twice, Halen couldn't sleep anymore and he didn't allow any of his men to sleep either. All of them had their eyes peeled as they watched their surroundings carefully.

Even if just a mosquito flew in, they'd kill it immediately!

"Mr Halen, in just another hour, we'll have to head towards the Li family," said one of his subordinates.

They could hardly wait. There was no way to rest within the camp and this was just a waste of energy and strength. It was better to head towards the Li family early, kill them off, then go back and have a good rest.

"Why don't we head off now? Let's kill them before they realize what's even happening!"

Halen frowned.

"OK!" he shouted loudly. "Send orders for all five troops to get ready and just leave a few men behind to guard the campsite!"

"We'll leave right now!"

"We'll leave right now!"

With that, all five troops totaling 500 men suited

NH

up and gathered at the entrance of the camp.

Troop Three's leader stood right in front. "Mr Halen, Troop Three is ready to go!"

"Troop Two is ready!"

"Troop One is ready!"

"Troop Five.."

BANG!

Before the leader of Troop Five could finish his sentence, a spine tingling sound cut right through the night sky. The leader of Troop Five immediately flew out and there was a terrifying bloodied hole that went through his head.

"There's a sniper!" shouted someone.

BANG!

The same sound cut through the sky and the leader of Troop Two couldn't even duck in time!

Where was the sniper?

Where was he?!

Halen immediately crouched on the ground and pulled some men to protect him.

"Protect me! Hurry up!" he shouted. The men around him went into a panic as they started to search the place for the sniper. But it was so dark, so it was nearly impossible to locate anybody.

NH

They didn't even know which direction the sound was coming from.

BANG!

The sound came again. It always just whooshed through quietly and took a life away.

"Find him! Find him now!!" shouted Halen. The five men around him surrounded him without leaving any gap.

What a frightening sniper.

On top of that, there were very few hiding places around this campsite for a sniper to hide in. Where was this guy?

Halen wasn't too surprised. There weren't many of them, but such formidable snipers did exist. However, only those really powerful mercenary armies would be able to afford them.

Did the Purple Moon Mercenary Army offend someone?

That was impossible!

Suddenly, he thought of someone and he immediately gulped as his throat went dry.

"The...boss who backs the Li family?"

NH

Halen was in control of this campsite because he was sent here to take control of this area.

That was the mission the lieutenant had given him!

Taking the Li family down was part of his mission too, but it seemed like he had gotten into trouble now.

Was it really the one backing the Li family?

Halen's expression turned a little nasty. He had spent a lot of money to get reliable information on the Li family, and confirmed that this father and son had been fooling him all this time and they didn't have anybody powerful backing them at all.

But now...

BANG!

BANG!

BANG!

Another person would suddenly collapse from time to time, and some blood even spurted onto Halen's face!

Three out of the five men protecting him had already died and Halen was going insane.

"Find him! Hurry up and find him! Where is he?! Find him!!"

The entire campsite had gone mad.

NH

Everyone was running around the camp like a bunch of headless chickens. Nobody could spot a sniper in this darkness hiding anywhere between a few hundred meters away to a few kilometers away!

Besides, Fei was such an expert sniper, so if he wanted to hide himself, there was no way these men would find him.

Brother Gou and the wolves felt blood surging through their veins!

“The signal has been given!”

All of them instantly turned into wolves as their eyes seemed to gleam a green color.

“Let’s go!” commanded Brother Gou. All of them hid themselves and made their way towards the campsite.

They had already changed into the Purple Moon Mercenary Army’s uniforms, so once they got near to the campsite, they could easily mingle in with the rest. They would be wolves among sheep and that was the time they would begin their massacre!

Halen was really going nuts. He could hear a lot of gunshots fired in all directions, but there was no way of locating that sniper at all.

The men protecting him continued to fall away, as if they had been targeted by the grim reaper and were destined to die!

NH

It was terrifying!

“Find him!! Find him now!!”

Some men ran out of the campsite and scattered themselves in all directions. But the moment they entered the darkness, they realized there were figures running past them towards the camp.

Then...

CRAACK!

Their necks were broken on the spot!

Figure after figure flashed past them like ghosts. They were eerie and terrifying at the same time.

In no time, a few dozen soldiers had already lost their lives.

“There are more of them outside! There are more out there!” one of the leaders shouted.

Immediately after he said that, he flew several meters out before crashing heavily on the ground with a red hole between his eyes.

Halen felt like his heart was going to leap out of his mouth.

What on earth was going on?

His campsite had suddenly turned into hell and there was no way of getting out nor stopping these ghostly figures in the darkness out there.

“Protect me, I’m going in!” shouted Halen.

NH

There was nothing else he could do but hide.

He knew that once he exposed his position, he would definitely die!

This was too frightening!

The camp was a mess, so nobody realized that several figures had already infiltrated the camp. Murderous aura after murderous aura intensified right next to them...

They were so close that they couldn't even fire a gun. The blades of their army knives gleamed coldly.

"Attack!!" Brother Gou gave a low growl and the wolves pounced on the soldiers.

.....

It was nearly dawn.

While all this was happening.

Li Zhengshang's side didn't sleep all night. They couldn't sleep at all.

The final number of men at 5AM stood at just a little over a hundred. The rest had run in the night.

"Fall in!" commanded Li Genhong.

These hundred odd men immediately fell in, and it was clear from their faces that many of them had struggled and hesitated through the night.

NH

But they all chose to stay in the end.

It wasn't because they were loyal to the Li family, but because they wanted to uphold the basic integrity of being a mercenary soldier!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

“Mr Jiang, we’re left with these hundred odd men.” Li Zhengshang’s voice was a little hoarse, disappointed and guilty.

“It’s enough.” Jiang Ning nodded. There was no expression on his face, and it was impossible to tell what he was thinking about.

He stood in front of the soldiers and said in a loud voice, “Congratulations for making the right decision!”

All the soldiers looked up when he said this.

“Since all of you chose to stay, it means that all of you have principles,” declared Jiang Ning loudly. “Since you’ve decided to stay, it means that you will get even more opportunities!”

He looked around and raised one finger.

“Fight the Purple Moon Mercenary Army soldiers! You will get US\$10,000 for each soldier you kill!”

All their eyes lit up like bloodthirsty wolves when they heard this!

In this poverty stricken land where human lives weren’t worth anything, they had become mercenaries in order to earn as much as they could in order to feed their families. Even if they became crippled or died in battle, at least this money would be enough to help their families to survive.

Nobody would have chosen this path if they didn’t have to.

NH

“Are you serious?” asked one of them in a trembling voice.

“Of course I’m serious. When have we ever lied to you?” said Jiang Ning. “Each one you kill is worth US\$10,000! No upper limit!”

All of them were even more motivated now.

“Kill them!!” one of them suddenly shouted like a wild beast.

Loyalty was meaningless! They were mercenary soldiers who fought for nothing but money!

Only money motivated them!

As long as you paid them enough, they were willing to sacrifice their lives.

That was the only way to survive in this place!

Li Zhengshang and his son held their breaths. They knew that this was the reality in this region, but they had never really felt it until now.

This was the Middle East, the universe of the mercenary armies!

“Kill! Kill! Kill!

All of them looked like they had gone mad and they no longer cared if they died in this fight. Killing a few enemies was enough to earn a lot of money for their families and help them to live on.

It was one life for many lives.

NH

It was totally worth it.

“Let’s set off now!” shouted Li Genhong as he led them personally.

There were only a little more than a hundred of them, so they only needed a few dozen vehicles and they headed straight for Halen’s campsite.

Li Zhengshang watched the cars drive off and his body was still trembling.

“Mr Jiang, we’ll win this battle, right?”

“Of course. They’re just going there to tidy up the loose ends, and I just wanted to test them,” said Jiang Ning calmly. “The Purple Moon Mercenary Army is nothing. In this place, only the strongest survive. I want to protect what I want, so I will not allow anybody else to stick their foot into my territory.”

“Whoever even tries will get their necks broken!”

The murderous aura from Jiang Ning made Li Zhengshang tremble all over.

This was the first time he felt such a terrifying aura from Jiang Ning.

This was the aura that a victor in war had. It was a fearless aura that peered down at everyone else!

He felt like he could see that this warzone wasn’t going to see peace for a while.

And it was all because Jiang Ning was here.

NH

There was no peace and quiet wherever Jiang Ning went!

“Mr Li, it’s time to get ready,” said Jiang Ning as he turned towards Li Zhengshang. “They’ll be back in about three hours’ time.”

“Get ready?” Li Zhengshang was still confused.

“A celebratory party!” said Jiang Ning. “And money, of course. We must keep our promise to them. They get US\$10,000 for each soldier they kill!”

“How much should I prepare?” Li Zhengshang gulped.

“\$2 million will be enough,” said Jiang Ning calmly. “I told Gou and the rest to leave 200 for them.”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

If Jiang Ning didn't tell them beforehand to leave 200 men behind, the wolves wouldn't leave anyone alive.

Those crazy fellows only fully displayed their prowess in a battle like this.

Li Zhengshang didn't delay and ran off to get ready.

He listened to everything that Jiang Ning said now. Even if Jiang Ning told him to bury his head in sand, Li Zhengshang would do it without hesitation.

He thought that he could remain on top of things even though this place was so messy. But it was clear that he didn't understand this place at all and didn't understand how these mercenary soldiers worked. And he obviously had no idea how to really survive and develop in this region.

He was so glad that Jiang Ning had come!

Time went by.

Jiang Ning sat in the living room and sipped his tea leisurely.

The only person who could remain this relaxed despite the situation was probably Jiang Ning.

In no time, the sound of cars honking could be heard from outside, and it was accompanied by a victorious sort of air!

Jiang Ning looked up. "They're back."

NH

He got up and Li Zhengshang followed him out.

All the cars stopped and the soldiers hopped out from the cars. All of them were still pumped up, as if they had just climbed out from a sea of dead bodies and their eyes were still crazed and bloodthirsty.

Li Genhong stood right at the front and his body was still trembling slightly. His whole head was filled with nothing but the scenes of that exciting battle earlier!

They were nuts!

They must have been nuts!

He only had slightly more than a hundred people and they had dared to dash into the campsite of the Purple Moon Mercenary Army. Even more surprisingly, the Purple Moon Mercenary Army soldiers were no match for them and were defeated so easily.

Of course, he knew that Jiang Ning had made arrangements beforehand to greatly reduce Halen's manpower, but even so, they were still only half the number of people that Halen had!

But when it came to energy and presence, there was no way of comparing the two sides. The moment Li Genhong led his men in, it was as if they had exploded through the campsite and there was gunfire and howls of pain everywhere.

He felt like he had brought a pack of wolves into the camp instead...

NH

Besides the men who had died or were wounded, he actually had more than 80 men with him!

All of them were holding the emblem of the Purple Moon Mercenary Army soldiers that they had ripped from their enemies in order to prove how many men they had killed.

Jiang Ning stood there and nodded slightly. Li Zhengshang took a step forward.

“Congratulations on returning victorious!”

“So what if those men were from the Purple Moon Mercenary Army? If they dare to offend us, they have to pay the price!”

“Those runaway soldiers would never know what sort of army they left! They’ll regret forgoing the chance they had to become a hero in the battlefield!”

Li Zhengshang shouted these words fiercely.

All the soldiers were very excited.

They never thought that they were capable of doing something like this. They felt like they had been possessed by some God of War and were unstoppable!

Many of them started to look at the pieces of cloth in their hands and felt like they were looking at stacks of cash. Their eyes turned red immediately.

This was the money they had used their lives in

NH

exchange for! This was what they lived and died for!

“I just want to tell you that the Li family army will continue to grow stronger and develop, and all of you here will become the core of this army!”

“Everything you can get here will be way beyond your imagination!”


Jiang Ning said before that there was no point in talking to mercenary soldiers about loyalty, because this concept didn't exist to them at all.

What he had to do was to pay them sufficiently first, then they would be able to consider other aspects of life.

Li Zhengshang waved his hands and someone carried a box to the front. The crowd was in an uproar!

They could see that there was money inside the box!

Those were all green colored notes!

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

So much money!

All of their eyes lit up and some of them even had to swallow their saliva.

“We promised you that each soldier you kill is worth US\$10,000, so we’ll definitely fulfil our promise!” shouted Li Zhengshang. “All of you, come up one by one to collect your money!”

Everyone was going mad with excitement.

Jiang Ning had not lied to them!

This string of surprises made them feel like they were floating on a cloud and it didn’t feel real.

The Purple Moon Mercenary Army had been the leaders of this area for a long time. Even though Halen had been in charge of this area and the lieutenant wasn’t around, he had managed to keep this area under his control for several years now.

But today, they had been completely destroyed!

They had been destroyed by just a little over a hundred of them!

They had never experienced victory like this before, and they could feel their hearts come alive. The cash they saw in front of them made their hearts bubble over with joy.

It was a huge boost to their morale!

“Ahgus, US\$50,000!” shouted Li Zhengshang as

NH

he handed out the cash.

Every time he shouted a number, everyone's heart shook.

“Badis, \$120,000!”

A huge commotion immediately started.
US\$120,000!

Everyone looked at the young man who went forward. He looked no more than twenty years old, but he was so formidable.

Even Jiang Ning took a second glance, and his eyes gleamed brightly.

Badis was a little embarrassed by the attention and he kept his head bowed as he walked to Li Zhengshang. “Thank you, Mr Li.”

Li Zhengshang looked at him, then turned to Jiang Ning to see Jiang Ning nod. Li Zhengshang immediately took out another US\$30,000 and gave it to Badis.

“You’ve killed the highest number of soldiers, so this is Mr Jiang’s reward to you!”

Everyone was up in arms.

There were additional rewards!

“In the future, no matter who you are, as long as you kill the most number of enemies, Mr Jiang will always have additional cash rewards waiting for you!”

NH

“As I said, you will definitely get more by staying in this army than anywhere else!”

“We cherish every soldier we have, and we know that all your lives are precious. Since you have used your lives in exchange for our victory, your lives are definitely worth this much money!”

Li Zhengshang’s words seemed to possess some sort of magic, and with the allure of those green colored notes they received, the soldiers could feel their blood surging through their bodies.

So they could get so much by staying here! So the Li family really valued them and treated their lives as human lives!

“Thank you, Mr Jiang.” Badis turned to look at Jiang Ning and sounded a little timid as he spoke in a soft but extremely respectful voice.

He could sense that Jiang Ning was a really powerful person.

He was even more powerful and frightening than Li Zhengshang and his son.

It was a strange feeling that he couldn’t describe, but could most certainly feel.

“Do you want to become stronger?” Jiang Ning looked at Badis, then turned to look at the rest. “Do all of you want to become even stronger?”

“Do you want to become real soldiers in this battlefield and look down upon the rest? Do you want to become an invincible and super powerful

NH

mercenary army?”

His voice was like rolling thunder as it exploded in everyone’s ears.

“I can give you more than anything you can imagine!”

Badis’ body trembled slightly and he had been frightened by Jiang Ning’s gaze. He couldn’t help but clench his fists. “You...you can make us even stronger?”


“How much stronger?”

Jiang Ning narrowed his eyes and there was no expression on his face, but that look in his eyes was enough for Badis to feel like he had fallen into an icy abyss!

That icy feeling that spread through his entire body was too terrifying!

Was this...was this a murderous aura he was feeling?

This was really frightening!

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

It felt so real!

Badis had felt like this before. Whenever he ran into a dangerous situation in battle and was about to die, he felt like this.

But right now, all he did was to stand in front of Jiang Ning.

How frightening!

And he had just asked Jiang Ning how much more stronger Jiang Ning could make them.

The aura that Jiang Ning exuded was enough for him to lose all his rationale. His hand was holding onto a weapon, but that hand started to tremble uncontrollably as well.

Jiang Ning didn't need to elaborate at all. His gaze was his answer.

"The future of the Li family's army will surpass your imagination," said Jiang Ning. "I guarantee that all of you who chose to stay behind will not regret doing this."

He called them the Li family's army, and not Lin Group's or Jiang Ning's. They belonged to the Li family!

He already said that this area was to be under Li Zhengshang and Li Genhong's control, so he would not interfere and would not take away their authority.

Jiang Ning had made a name for himself in this

NH

place before, so there was no need to do that again.

All the mercenary soldiers standing before him were very excited and even their breathing quickened. They were all people familiar with living on the edge of dying all the time, so they knew very well who was truly powerful and who wasn't.

Jiang Ning was definitely powerful!

Even though they had never seen Jiang Ning fight or display any of his prowess, they had such a firm feeling about him.

Li Genhong dismissed the men and let them go back to rest. But after getting so much cash, it was probably hard for them to fall asleep.

This battle had given them not just confidence, but also a hope for the future!

At the back of the camp.

Jiang Ning was seated while Li Zhengshang was standing.

“Your brothers...aren't coming over?”

He knew that Jiang Ning had brought the wolves with him, but they hadn't appeared at all.

“They won't appear for the time being,” said Jiang Ning.

He had brought the wolves to act as a mysterious

NH

force and a strength that was hidden away in the dark. If they were to appear now, that would be as good as revealing his trump card.

He also had Fei hiding in the shadows. Fei was extremely important in this place, and he definitely could not expose himself.

Jiang Ning himself had no idea where Fei was and what sort of identity he had assumed while he was here. He just needed to follow their agreed method to give out instructions, and Fei would definitely complete any mission he was given.

Such battles were really too exciting.

Even though a few hours had passed and Li Genhong had already taken a good bath, had a meal and drank an entire bottle of iced water, he still couldn't calm back down.

He couldn't stand properly and his legs were still shivering.

In the past, he was nothing but a spoilt brat who was a little conniving and understood just a few things about human nature.

But now he was in a battlefield!

This was a place where people actually got killed!

This was a place where weapons gleamed coldly, blood spurted everywhere, and limbs flew in all directions!

This wasn't something that ordinary people could

NH

withstand. He had been here for more than half a year and this was the first time he had seen such a bloody scene. His stomach continued to feel nauseous and he still felt like vomiting.

That was why Li Genhong had kept quiet all this time.

He was afraid of puking if he opened his mouth, so he obediently sat by the side and kept quiet.

“We’ve got great morale among the soldiers now, but we really don’t have enough people. Even if those who ran away come back now, we can’t take them back!”

Li Zhengshang slammed the table angrily. “Since they could run once, they could always run again!”

He wasn’t going to give them a chance and wasn’t going to make the same mistake as before.

“Forming an army is not your aim but a method,” said Jiang Ning. “You must remember what your mission here is and how to complete that mission.”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Jiang Ning then turned to look at Li Genhong.

“Nobody has discovered that mine yet, right?”

“Not at the moment. I’ve arranged for trustworthy men to watch over it.” Li Genhong paused for a moment. “In fact, they don’t know what’s in that piece of land either.”

He had been extra careful because he didn’t want anything to go wrong.

That mine was incredibly important to Jiang Ning, and their greatest mission right now was to protect that mine.

He couldn’t afford any mistakes at all.

If someone found out about this mine, he would be in big trouble.

Jiang Ning looked at Li Genhong and burst out laughing. “You’re a pretty smart one.”

“We’ve won today, but this is only the beginning. That Halen managed to escape, so I’m sure they’ll come back again.”

He looked at the father and son before him. “So what we need to do now is to prepare for another victorious battle and completely annihilate the Purple Moon Mercenary Army!”

Li Zhengshang and Li Genhong shuddered.

Completely annihilate the Purple Moon Mercenary Army?

NH

Jiang Ning was nuts!

They had won today because the wolves had launched an attack first and had to deliberately leave them with a few soldiers to kill.

But the lieutenant had a lot of men who were well trained and armed as well, while they only had fewer than 100 men. How were they supposed to fight at this rate?

“Mr Jiang, we might have to take some time to plan this attack a little more carefully!” Li Zhengshang couldn’t help but say this after some hesitation.

This wasn’t a joke.

This was taking a gamble on everyone’s lives!

“Mr Li, this isn’t up to us you know?” Jiang Ning laughed. “You’ve killed off half his territory and you think he’ll let it go?”

Li Zhengshang froze.

Of course the lieutenant wasn’t going to let him off. If Li Zhengshang was in his shoes, he wouldn’t either.

But he heard that this lieutenant was a cruel and extremely powerful man with many well trained soldiers. So even with the wolves around, that would only add on another 20 or 30 men to his current army. They would lose in terms of the number of men they had as well as the weapons they had.

NH

“Mr Li, if I were you, I wouldn’t be wasting any time now,” said Jiang Ning calmly. “You’d better quickly gather more soldiers, dig some trenches, fortify your camp and get some weapons and explosives ready. All these things need time to prepare, you know.”

“And your enemies aren’t going to give you a lot of time.”

Li Zhengshang took a deep breath and he could already feel the pressure.

They didn’t have time at all.

“Genhong! Hurry up and get all these things settled!”

Both father and son ran off to get prepared.

Jiang Ning smiled faintly and he still looked as relaxed as ever.

“Is it finally going to start? I can finally have some fun.”

Meanwhile.

Back at Purple Moon Mercenary Army’s main campsite!

Halen had barely managed to escape. His body was covered in dirt and his face had blood all over it. If he hadn’t run fast enough and used many other men to protect himself, there was no way he could be standing here right now.

NH

“Lieutenant, I have let you down!”

Halen fell to his knees with a thud and kowtowed profusely.

Blood soon trickled down his forehead but he continued to kowtow.

The lieutenant didn't say anything as he placed both arms on his chair's armrest. His expression seemed to be frozen and he didn't look very affected at all.

But those who knew the lieutenant knew that he was the scariest when he behaved like this.

“How many men are left?” the lieutenant finally broke his silence after a long time, and his voice trembled slightly.

“Besides me...nobody else...”

Halen's throat went dry.

The Li family's army seemed to have all gone mad and attacked them like their lives didn't matter. It was as if they were determined to tear a piece of flesh from them even if they ended up dying.

BANG!

Just after Halen finished his sentence, there was a loud bang and he fell backwards onto the floor. His widened eyes still carried a tinge of indignation...

NH

“Trash!” spat the lieutenant angrily and didn’t give Halen a second glance.

Almost half of his men had been killed thanks to Halen and he wished he had killed this useless Halen a long time ago!

He stood up and his expression was dark. The frightening scars on his bald head struck fear in many hearts.

“This is a feud we must settle! I have never been so humiliated before!” he shouted angrily. “I want those fellows dead! I want them to go to hell!”

“Gather everyone! We’re going to crush them!”

This was a battle that had to be fought.

Half his men had been defeated by an army of just slightly more than 100 men. How could he possibly remain in this region if others found out about what happened?

Everyone would laugh at him!

He would become the Middle East’s biggest joke!

His eyes were so malicious, it was terrifying. He looked like a venomous snake.

He couldn’t wait even one minute more. He immediately sent orders to gather all his men so that he could trample those hundred odd men underfoot.

All the men gathered in no time.

NH

There were more than 600 of them!

All their weapons and equipment were excellent and even though they had not fought in a while, they were all formidable men.

These men were his best, and were definitely way better than the soldiers that Halen led previously. But even though Halen's men were not as good, it was still painful to lose them all.

He stood right in front and pulled the saber at his waist out.

"We must not let anybody trample on the prestige of the Purple Moon Mercenary Army!"

"All of you, follow me! I'm going to make those assholes disappear from the face of this earth! Onward!"

His voice sounded like the rumbling of thunder as it filled the skies.

The lieutenant did not hesitate at all as he led his troops towards the Li family's camp.

Meanwhile.

Li Zhengshang and Li Genhong seemed to have gone mad.

They only had one day to reorganize themselves, but they knew that they probably had even less than one day.

Where were they going to find so many people in

NH

such a short time?

Even though they had won the last battle, they were going to face the lieutenant's main army next. The difference was too great.

Fighting them was as good as sending themselves to die.

Li Zhengshang wasn't too hopeful either.

But the moment they entered the city and started their recruitment exercise, a huge number of men came to sign up with them and the response was overwhelming.

"Me me me! I want to sign up! I want to sign up!"

"Me too! Count me in!"

"Did you say each enemy soldier is worth \$10,000?! Count me in too!"

Everyone was shouting away and was afraid that Li Zhengshang might not want them.

They had heard all about the prize money, and had seen for themselves how those men had brought actual cash home. All that money was for real!

For people like them, they just needed to earn enough to feed their families. So what if they had to become mercenary soldiers?

You could even kill them on the spot if they were promised this much money!

NH

Li Zhengshang was taken aback.

“One by one! We need to go through checks and ensure that we only take the best in!” Li Genhong snapped out of his shock first and started shouting back. “As long as you’re good enough, you will be able to join our army and you will get the chance to have everything you’ve ever wanted!”

“You can become stronger, and you can become someone respected by others!”

Li Genhong was very good at talking, and even Jiang Ning would have given him a thumbs up if he were here. It only took a few words from Li Genhong to get everyone all riled up, and even more people started flocking towards him.

After one morning, more than 800 men had signed up!

Li Zhengshang couldn’t believe it at all.

More than 800 men?!

He had only managed to recruit 300 after half a year, and 200 of them had escaped when they thought they were going to face a losing battle. But in just one morning, he had recruited more than 800 men?!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

If Li Zhengshang stuck around until afternoon, he might get 2,000 men!

It was true that money made the world go round.

This was especially true in a place where money was worth even more than their lives.

But their current limits only allowed them to take in a total of 1,000 men. Jiang Ning said quality was more important than quantity. As long as they were well trained, that made them an excellent troop!

In order to groom an excellent troop, one had to burn through a lot of money. Not spend money. Burn money.

Li Zhengshang had used up almost all the money he had brought along from Las Vegas, but he had also received quite a number of resources from destroying Halen's camp, so that would last them for a while.

And even if all that ran out, Jiang Ning was backing them financially, so there was no lack of money.

Li Genhong led the men back to their camp and got everyone to gather.

"Mr Jiang, we've recruited more than 800 men!" He was rather excited as he ran over to report to Jiang Ning. "Our soldiers add up to nearly 1,000 men now, so we won't have to worry even if that lieutenant attacks us now!"

NH

“Just having more people on your side is useless,” said Jiang Ning. “These men are here for the money, so it will work in the short run, but it won’t work out in the long run.”

“But didn’t you say that it was pointless to talk to them about loyalty?”

Li Genhong became a little confused. Since these people didn’t care about loyalty, he had to use money to motivate them instead.

“You don’t need to have loyalty, but you need to have principles. If you make sure that this group is principled and sticks to their principles, then you won’t have the problem of traitors.”

“That’s what you need to consider. Understand?”

“Got it!” Li Genhong nodded and took these words to heart, but he had to think about how to actually get it done.

Right now, he had to deal with the impending battle with the lieutenant. He would think about this after the battle was over!

Li Genhong quickly ran out to get everything arranged and organized. Within two hours, he had established a new order among these men. He was actually really gifted in this aspect.

After that, it was time to make them sign an agreement, delegate tasks, then distribute weapons and equipment.

He decided to use the original batch of soldiers to

NH

teach the new soldiers. The older batch of soldiers were split into ten troops to take on 100 of the new soldiers each, and he made the older batch of soldiers the leaders of these troops.

The older batch had gone through a real battle, so they exuded a murderous aura that was excellent at keeping everyone else in check.

This hierarchy also gave the older batch of soldiers a sense of prestige and responsibility.

“With a hierarchy in place, it makes each one want to rise up the ranks. Everyone wants to become a commander and earn more money. Li Genhong is really quite smart.”

This was a common practice in corporations, but it was very rarely seen among mercenary armies.

Most other mercenary armies had just one commander right at the top with a few loyal subordinates to take orders from the commander. But Li Genhong didn't want to do it like this.

That was because he had Jiang Ning backing him. With this powerful force backing him, he didn't need to worry about these soldiers suddenly going out of control. Besides, what Jiang Ning promised was more than just money!

He also promised them hope and dreams!

All the menial work was done very quickly because everyone worked hard. Nobody wanted to lose any chance to earn money.

NH

All of them had reddened eyes as if they had all gone mad. They were like bloodthirsty wild animals that couldn't wait for the enemy to come so that they could tear them apart!

After all, each enemy killed was worth US\$10,000!

And there was no upper limit!

Killing one was already a good deal, killing two was an amazing deal, and killing three soldiers would be enough to feed their families for an entire year.

That was a lot of money!

They could only survive if they had money. Without money, they didn't even have the right to live!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Jiang Ning never looked down on these people. In fact, many of them did not choose to become a mercenary soldier for their own sakes.

Most of them were doing this for their families and loved ones.

This region had become a playground for the Third World powers. For the sake of gaining more benefits, they could turn this place into a warzone, or they could turn this place into a complete wasteland.

But the people who lived here didn't have a choice at all.

There was no chance for them to be employed in any other industry. Who would dare to start a company or open a factory here?

They didn't even have the right to go anywhere near that precious crude oil or mines even though they were indigenous to this land.

Their only choice was to become mercenary soldiers and work for those major powers. They had to use their own lives to fight for the benefits that these powers wanted for themselves.

They were actually very pitiful.

Most people didn't know much about them, but Jiang Ning knew how cruel this place really was.

But he was no messiah and couldn't change the current situation here. That wasn't practical.

NH

The only thing he could do was to help those who trusted in him to live better lives.

He looked at the trenches that had been dug outside the camp, the assembled weapons and the thousand men split into ten troops. All of them were ready and followed the instructions from the top.

They were now all just waiting for the lieutenant to come with his men, and they couldn't wait to fight!

"We've got news that the lieutenant is on the way, and he'll reach our camp in another 30 minutes!" Li Genhong had already arranged for informants to plant themselves along the way and update him on the situation. He had gone through several of such fights and was getting better and better at it. It was as if he had discovered a new side of himself.

"They're so slow," Jiang Ning shook his head. "Look at their eyes."

The soldiers were all armed and their eyes were reddened as they already had their fingers on the trigger of their guns. They couldn't wait to unlock the safety catch on their weapons.

But the enemy wasn't here yet.

The bloodthirsty look in their eyes looked frightening enough.

If the lieutenant found out that the Li family army had suddenly increased in number so

NH

dramatically and the army was now filled with a whole bunch of lunatics, he might choose against coming out to fight.

“But it’s not a bad thing. Let them wait then. 30 minutes is enough for them to accumulate enough murder within their bodies.”

“Mr Jiang, we don’t need Brother Gou and the rest to launch an attack first?”

“No need,” replied Jiang Ning calmly. “We have an advantage in numbers. If we still lose, then you guys can prepare to die.”

“It’s not that easy to earn my money, you know.”

Jiang Ning was no philanthropist.

Nearly a thousand people had died at Jiang Ning’s hands, and they were all extremely powerful opponents. Ordinary people weren’t eligible to die at his hands.

There were no good people in war.

Jiang Ning remained as calm as ever.

But Li Zhengshang sat to one side nervously. His breathing quickened and he couldn’t sit still. He didn’t know where to put his hands, so he kept picking up a cup to drink more water.

Li Genhong stood on the frontlines and was fully armed. He had never experienced anything like this before, but with him right in front, all the soldiers behind him felt confident!

NH

They couldn't wait!

“They're here!” Li Genhong spotted the Purple Moon Mercenary Army cars in his binoculars.

He gave a low shout and all the commanders next to him immediately gave the signal.

“Prepare to fight!”

The blood in these soldiers surged through their bodies after waiting for so long, and a crazed glint gleamed in their bloodthirsty looking eyes!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

In no time, the ground started to tremble gently as the sound of car engines hit their ears.

All the mercenary soldiers kept their eyes on the army that was making their way towards them. What they saw wasn't enemy soldiers but US\$10,000, US\$20,000, US\$30,000...

They felt like they could see stacks and stacks of green notes coming towards them!

"Listen up!" Li Genhong immediately sent orders out. "Follow the battle plan we went through earlier!"

"Yes, Young Master Li!" responded the ten commanders.

Everyone wanted to win, and they had to win. They were going to kill their enemies, and they were going to make sure they killed all of them.

They had to survive in order to collect their cash prize!

Money made people do anything, and it could turn all these people in killing machines!

VROOOM!

They were here!

The lieutenant was seated in a car with some troops in front to lead the way and more troops behind to cover him. He placed himself in the most important and safest position, and wasn't going to allow himself to be surrounded by the

NH

enemy so easily.

His expression was nasty. After a long journey, he wasn't really tired, but the fury and indignation he felt inside never went away.

It would only go away after he chopped off the heads of Li Zhengshang and Li Genhong.

"Lieutenant, it's just ahead and we're almost there!" reported one of his subordinates.

"Rush in, surround them and wipe them out!" the lieutenant laughed coldly. "It's just a hundred odd men after all. I want all their heads to be displayed in front of me so that I can offer them to our dead brothers!"

Once he gave the command, the cars in front suddenly picked up speed. The other vehicles quickly drove ahead and they formed a circle around the Li family's campsite.

The Li family only had a little more than a hundred men, so the lieutenant was sure that this battle was going to end in less than five minutes.

He was going to watch the Li family pay the price for what they did with his own eyes!

"They're here!" Li Genhong raised his arm, then swung it down immediately. "Brothers, attack!"

Once he gave the order, the terrible noise of gunfire rang through the skies and bullets flew everywhere.

NH

It was ear deafening!

DA DA DA!

The intense firing instantly hit the front car multiple times and made it look more like a beehive in an instant.

“Blast away!”

Someone gave a shout and it was quickly followed by a loud explosion. One of the cars flipped over and the tremendous blast left everyone’s ears ringing.

The terrifying flames swallowed the entire car in an instant and only shrieks could be heard from within the car, but not a single person made it out alive.

“What’s going on?” The lieutenant’s face paled and immediately got the driver to hit the brakes instead of driving over.

The horrifying sounds of explosions made his eyes tremble.

BOOM!

BOOM!

BOOM!

The quick succession of blasts sent all the vehicles right in front flying aside, and intense gunfire came from all sides.

NH

“Why...why do they have so many people?!”

This didn't look like a hundred people at all!

That was more like a thousand people!

They were firing away so aggressively too. Was ammunition free or something?

DOONG DOONG DOONG!

The vehicles continued to blast under the rain of bullets and couldn't hold up for long. The lieutenant was pale in the face and he still had no idea what just happened.

“Counterattack! Counterattack!” He gave orders, but there was no one to carry his orders to the rest.

“Turn around! Turn around! Hurry up!” His face was void of any color now. As he predicted, this battle didn't even last five minutes, but the one who was losing was himself.

When he saw that the lieutenant and his men couldn't hold up and couldn't even launch any counterattack, Li Genhong didn't wait any longer. “Attack! Your prize money is right there!”

“One man is worth US\$10,000! Every ten will get you an additional \$10,000!”

KABOOM!

All the soldiers in the trenches rushed out like a bunch of madmen and leapt out like wild

NH

leopards. The gleam in their eyes struck fear even in the hearts of the Purple Moon Mercenary Army soldiers!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

These men were a pack of wild beasts!

These wild beasts were going to gobble them up without even leaving a single bone behind.

They were wild, violent and clearly insane.

In no time, the sounds of shouting and howling echoed through the skies.

Li Genhong stood where he was and his body trembled. This scene was happening all over again.

He watched as all these crazy men dashed forward and he even felt the urge to join them in this madness. It was really scary.

Was this the influence of the environment on him?

He felt a strong urge to fight and he was almost unable to hold himself back.

Li Genhong took a deep breath and turned back to look at Jiang Ning, but Jiang Ning's expression was so calm. It was as if this scene in front of him was nothing unusual and he was still drinking tea very leisurely.

It seemed like there was nothing in this world that could affect Jiang Ning's emotions.

After looking at Jiang Ning, Li Genhong slowly calmed back down.

He knew that his responsibility wasn't to fight alongside those mercenary soldiers.

NH

He was their commander-in-chief, so he had to be in control of the whole situation. He had to control the direction of the battle, but he also had to be in control of his own soldiers.

Li Genhong became even calmer at this thought.

These soldiers were definitely insane.

Money was able to turn them in a bunch of lunatics and turned them into wild beasts. They didn't care even if they got injured or lost their lives.

So how could he possibly control them?

These people were a double edged sword, so if he didn't control them well, they would become trouble.

Jiang Ning didn't spell it out for him, so he had to observe these people himself and settle this problem himself.

Jiang Ning said that he and his father were in control here, so that included this aspect.

Li Genhong took a deep breath and his heart felt calmer now. His blood also stopped rushing through his body and his eyes could see more clearly. He looked out at crazed soldiers making an attack without caring about anything in the world and he had an idea.

"We need to stage a failure," said Li Genhong. "We need a failure that will not hurt us too badly, but will make these people admit their shortcomings."

NH

He frowned slightly and he continued to think about this.

“That’s just the first part.” Li Genhong clenched his fists gently. “Mr Jiang said that I should not talk to these people about loyalty, because these people will never be loyal to the Li family, and will most certainly not be loyal to Mr Jiang. These people...”

Jiang Ning didn’t say it clearly, but he had given a few hints. After seeing the men in battle and watching the look in their eyes and the insanity in their behavior, Li Genhong suddenly got it.

These people weren’t loyal to him at all. But they went crazy killing the enemy and was even willing to die for the prize money promised. Why?

It was for their families!

They were loyal to no one but their own families!

They own loved ones!

They were living for their family members!

Li Genhong’s eyes immediately lit up.

His clenched fists were slowly relaxed, then suddenly clenched again, but the rest of his body was relaxed.

“It looks like it won’t be long before you can retire,” commented Jiang Ning as he watched the change in Li Genhong’s expression and body language.

NH

Li Zhengshang was still confused.

“If Genhong can mature, I hope to retire too. But I’d also like to help him as much as I can now.” Li Zhengshang sighed and turned to look at Jiang Ning. He opened his mouth to speak but didn’t get anything out.

He wanted to say that if Jiang Ning was willing to give Li Genhong a tip or two, then Li Genhong would definitely mature overnight. But he didn’t dare to say this because he had no right to.

Gaining a foothold here was already a very difficult thing to achieve.

Li Zhengshang could tell that these insane mercenary soldiers were definitely as good as sharp weapons.

But while sharp weapons could hurt the enemy, they could hurt themselves too.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

The problem was, how could these soldiers be controlled?

It wasn't possible for them to keep burning money and use money to control these people. If they ever became dissatisfied with the remuneration, these people would definitely rebel against them.

How could they resolve this problem now?

Li Zhengshang couldn't think of a way. These mercenary soldiers were a completely different type of people.

He thought about this while he looked out at the battle out there.

Meanwhile, the lieutenant had already jumped out from his car and started running for his life. His driver was already dead, so if he remained in the car, he was definitely going to die!

He could hear intense firing behind him, but the howls only seemed to come from his side. The other party seemed to have gone completely mad. Even when they were injured, they still pounced on his men...

What a tragic sight!

It was such a tragedy.

"Don't come any nearer! Don't come any nearer!"

The lieutenant fell to the ground and there was nowhere for him to run.

NH

He was surrounded by at least a hundred men!

They were all closing in on him.

The terrible pressure he felt made him feel like he couldn't breathe anymore.

What the hell was even happening now?

He had come to take revenge, but now he was the one who had to run for his life. He hadn't even managed to get into the Li family's camp.

He didn't even know where all these people came from.

The Li family's army had just gone through a battle with Halen's men and lost quite a number of men in that battle. According to his information, the Li family was only left with a hundred men or so, so it wouldn't be difficult for him to destroy the Li family's army!

But now...

There were more than a hundred just surrounding himself!

"AHHH!!!"

Before the lieutenant could wrap his head around this, all those mercenary soldiers came bounding towards him like a pack of wolves and devoured him in an instant.

The air was filled with the thick stench of blood.

NH

It seemed like this was one component of a war that would never go away.

Li Genhong was thoroughly shocked.

The Purple Moon Mercenary Army had been wiped out!

The Purple Moon Mercenary Army had been big bullies in the southern region, but now, the Li family's army had actually wiped them out. Li Zhengshang and Li Genhong could hardly believe it themselves.

What they could see was the result, but the process it took to get here had been very terrifying.

The cruelty of war was something that city folk like them had never gone through before.

It was as if they had gone from one universe to another.

It was as if they had jumped from heaven to hell.

But victory didn't bring about any emotional change in Jiang Ning. He didn't even ask about it.

After he had cleaned up everything, Li Genhong ran towards the living room and fell to his knees before Jiang Ning with a thud.

Li Zhengshang was completely stunned.

"Mr Jiang, thank you for the pointers!"

NH

Li Zhengshang was even more puzzled. When did Jiang Ning give his son any pointers?

He hadn't seen or heard anything.

"You're the one who managed to reach an understanding quickly," said Jiang Ning calmly. "Have you noticed that you seem to fit well here?"

Li Genhong shuddered suddenly, then nodded.

"It's a very strange sort of feeling." His eyes were gleaming brightly. "I can't put my finger on it, but I feel like I suddenly understand how this place works now."

He took a deep breath and gulped.

"Mr Jiang, back when we were in Las Vegas, did you already realize that I..."

He couldn't imagine it at all. Jiang Ning barely knew him back then but he already noticed something special in him that he didn't know about himself.

Jiang Ning's judgment of others was impeccable.

"Now that you know what you're capable of, make sure you do a good job," said Jiang Ning. "You can go ahead and do what needs to be done and I will not limit or restrict you. That's the authority I'm giving to you."

"Yes, Mr Jiang!" shouted Li Genhong in reply. "I will not let you down! The Li family will not let you down!"

NH

Li Genhong sounded rather agitated.

Jiang Ning's trust in him even made him feel a little guilty.

Jiang Ning had already noticed something special about him from the first time they met, and back then, Li Genhong was still extremely complacent, full of himself and had nearly made a terrible mistake!

Jiang Ning had pushed the Li family into a corner and they had no choice but to come to this war torn region.

Li Genhong didn't realize that Jiang Ning had done this with good intentions, but now, he realized that this was actually a fantastic opportunity for himself.

"Alright now, stop feeling so touched. Do what you have to do, you don't have that much time," said Jiang Ning. "You should know what sort of responsibility sits on your shoulders now."

"Yes, Mr Jiang!" Li Genhong knew what he had to do right now.

He wasn't just doing all this for the sake of the Li family or for Lin Group, but for his own country.

He was here to atone for his sins.

He was here to atone for his past sins.

"I understand, Mr Jiang. Don't worry, I will definitely protect that mine even if it costs me my

NH

life,” said Li Genhong.

He then turned and left very quickly, because he didn't want to waste a single minute.

Li Zhengshang was so stunned.

He still had no idea what just happened.

“Mr Jiang, this...” he opened his mouth to speak while his brain was still trying to figure out what on earth happened. But he still didn't get it.

He had been holding the fort all this while and was the one in charge of this place, but now he felt like an outsider and didn't seem to know anything now.

When did Jiang Ning give Li Genhong pointers?

And what did Li Genhong understand?

He felt like he was surrounded by a layer of fog.

“Alright now, you should get busy too. I don't think he can get everything done all by himself.”

Jiang Ning waved his hands about and didn't want to say too much.

He had always been like this. He never liked to elaborate.

Those who could understand would understand it the first time round. Those who didn't get it would never get it, so Jiang Ning was too lazy to explain things.

NH

Li Zhengshang didn't want to disturb Jiang Ning anymore, so he politely took his leave and left.

Jiang Ning sat in the living room by himself and enjoyed his tea.

He poured water into the teapot and the fragrance of tea filled the air and calmed his heart.

He had moved into the Middle East not only for the sake of that mine and the development of Lin Group's new venture into high technology and integrated circuits development, but also because Jiang Ning had other things in mind.

He wanted to enter the Third World!

He wanted Lin Group to gain a strong foothold in the Third World.

If they were able to get into the Third World, they would be able to obtain more resources and Lin Group would be able to expand. At the same time, it would also help to improve the position of Chinese merchants.

This was something very important to him.

He wanted Lin Group to become the face of Chinese entrepreneurship!

He wanted Lin Yuzhen to lead more Chinese businesses into the rest of the world!

This was the most important thing.

As for the last two pages of the Extreme Fist

NH

Technique Manual, Jiang Ning had already gotten Butler Zhao to work with Li Feidao's Assassins Group to search the globe, but they still had no results.

He had a feeling that the last pages were in the hands of those major powers of the Third World!

He was hunting those pages down, and so was Fang Yin. Jiang Ning had left him alive so that Fang Yin could continue searching for those pages. After all, the person who understood those pages the best right now was probably Fang Yin.

The most urgent thing to do now was to step into the Third World and find new clues.

As for the Middle East, he was going to leave it to Li Genhong to handle.

Meanwhile, Li Genhong had gathered all the commanders together.

"Young Master Li, what do you mean? We don't understand."

The commander of Troop Three frowned because he didn't understand what Li Genhong was saying. He wanted to give up this campsite and build a new one elsewhere?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

What was that supposed to mean?

The soldiers had just won two battles in a row and they were in high spirits right now.

Wasn't shifting camp going to demoralize the troops?

"That's right, Young Master Li. We've already won the Purple Moon Mercenary Army, so nobody in this region would dare to offend us anymore. If we build ourselves up well, we'll definitely be the kings of this place!"

"That's right. We're doing well here, so why should we move?"

Many of them didn't understand.

They didn't understand why Li Genhong suddenly made this decision.

"This place is too small," replied Li Genhong calmly.

He glanced at all of them. "You mean, you're happy with this tiny place?"

Everyone went quiet.

Li Genhong sounded very calm, but they could hear the ambition in his words!

"Young Master Li, please elaborate!" said the commander of Troop Five.

"Fine, I'll tell you now." Li Genhong walked to a

NH

map and drew a circle around a patch of wasteland. The bright red circle on the map instantly stood out to all of them.

“I want this area!” he said loudly. Then he used the same pen to draw a smaller circle within that first large circle. “I want to build our campsite here, and it should be able to take around 3,000 people!”

That was huge!

The circle he had drawn was more than ten times bigger than the campsite they had now. Even though it was wasteland, it wasn't going to be easy to take control of it.

After all, nobody liked to see another party gain territory.

“I want to build a hospital here!” Li Genhong continued without waiting for any responses. “I want any injured soldiers to get medical help as soon as possible! It's fine if my soldiers die in battle, but I refuse to let them die just because they couldn't get medical help in time!”

All the men who wanted to protest earlier felt their throats turn moist and their noses wrinkled up as they all stared wordlessly at Li Genhong.

“Over here,” Li Genhong drew another circle. “I want to build a school.”

WOONG.

Everyone felt their hair stand on end.

NH

They felt like they had been struck by lightning.

A school?

Was Li Genhong kidding?

They were in a battlefield!

Who on earth built a school in a battlefield?

He must have gone crazy!

“I hope that your children will grow up to have the ability to change this place. Even if they can’t change this place, at least they will have the chance to leave this place in search of a better life outside.”

“I want them to have the chance to be educated, to become literate, to understand what the world outside is like, to become kind people, and not to end up following in your footsteps...”

Li Genhong stretched his hands out and looked at them. “I don’t want them to be tainted with the stench of blood and die fighting for their own lives!”

All ten commanders felt tears come to their eyes.

Their children!

The most important people to them were their families, and most of all, their children.

They didn’t want their children to grow up to become mercenary soldiers like themselves. They

NH

didn't want their children to become sacrifices in war or killing machines.

Li Genhong was saying that the Li family was willing to groom and educate these children so that they could improve their lives!

It would be best if they could change this place, but they knew that was really too difficult. But even if they couldn't change this place, at least they could get the chance to leave this region and move to a bigger and better world out there.

"This part here!" Li Genhong continued to draw another circle as he wrote another word on the map. "I hope that we can build our homeland here!"

KABOOM!

All of them immediately felt emotional. It had been such a long time since they heard or even mentioned the word 'homeland'.

This place was no longer their homeland. It was hell for them now.

But now, Li Genhong said he wanted to build their homeland in that circle he just drew!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

They never thought they would hear the word 'homeland' again in this lifetime.

They never expected a foreigner to come here in order to build a new homeland for them!

Li Genhong was going to allow their children to go to school!

To change the futures of their children!

To possibly change everything in this region!

All ten commanders were sniffing as the word 'homeland' continued to echo in their minds.

Homeland!

"I want to turn this place into our homeland," said Li Genhong. "Honestly, this is going to be very difficult and we will definitely run into a million and one problems. There will be many things we must sacrifice and overcome along the way."

"We are now all working for money, but so what if we have money?"

He looked at all of them. "Even if I give you US\$100,000 now, can you change the future of your children?"

"After they grow up, the only road they might be left with is to die in a battle. Or perhaps, starve to death along the streets."

"Is that what you want to see?"

NH

Li Genhong took a deep breath and rapped his fingers in a rhythm on the desk.

“I wouldn’t want to see that.”

“I don’t have anywhere to go either. I’ve come here because I had no choice, but since I’m already here, I would like to do these things.”

He sat down and leaned back.

“Alright now, I’ve said everything I wanted to say. If you’re willing to work with me, then stay. If you’re not willing to, I won’t force you to stay. You can take the money you’ve earned and leave, it should last you for several years.”

Then he didn’t say anymore.

He had said everything he could already, so the rest was up to them to choose.

Silence.

All ten of them were silent.

They weren’t thinking about what decision to make, but they were thinking about the implications of actually doing something like this.

They were all people who had no choice in life at all. They could be alive today and dead tomorrow!

They weren’t afraid of death. They were afraid of what would happen to their families when they died.

NH

Their families would probably have to sacrifice another family member to become a mercenary soldier as well!

And this vicious cycle would just keep going on...

They had lived their lives like that already, so they didn't want to see the people they loved and cared about the most to continue living like this.

"I'll stay," said the commander of Troop Four as he placed his fist on the desk. "I'll follow Young Master Li."

His eyes were filled with determination. He didn't care whether he died or not, but he cared about his children.

He had already lost two out of his four children to battles, and he didn't want the remaining two to face the same fate.

"I'll stay too." The commander of Troop Eight also placed his fist on the desk. "No matter how much it takes, I hope that this plan will succeed."

He looked at Li Genhong. "Young Master Li, from today onwards, my life is yours!"

"Mine too!"

"Me too!"

"Me too!"

All ten of them chose to stay.

NH

Of course, they all knew that it was terribly difficult to achieve this aim, and some of them might end up dying in the process.

But was that important?

There was nothing more important than the futures of their children!

They had watched tragedy after tragedy unfold, and they had watched as despair slowly filled their children's eyes.

They might not be able to change their surroundings, but it was enough to be able to protect their loved ones!

Li Genhong looked at them.

“Excellent!”

“I can promise you right now that I, Li Genhong, will put in all my effort in order to achieve this aim! If I ever veer from my original intention, all of you may kill me on the spot!”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Li Genhong stood up with a determined look in his eyes. He placed his fist on the desk alongside the other ten men.

All of them were united as one now.

This wasn't just a job they had to do, but the responsibility on each of their shoulders.

That held a very different meaning.

"You can talk to the men in your troops. Those who are willing to stay can bring their families to the new camp. We've got plenty of space there and we can house a lot of people."

"As for those who don't want to stay, I won't force them."

Li Genhong declared, "They must decide by today. Tomorrow, we will move out from here and go to our new campsite!"

"Yes, Young Master Li!" None of the ten commanders raised any objections.

They knew that Li Genhong had other intentions for doing this, but as long as he could really achieve what he said, they didn't care about anything else.

Besides, during this time of working for them, the Li family had taken good care of them. They didn't treat the soldiers as merely tools, and actually saw them as human beings.

All of them walked out, and Li Genhong was sure

NH

that most of them would choose to stay.

He was very sure of it.

They were definitely willing to have a place that they could call home and be able to protect their families, even if they had to contribute money or even their own lives.

The word 'school' had made all their eyes light up.

That was the light of hope in their eyes.

It was something they never had before this.

"Since I'm going to do this, I must not fail."

Li Genhong clenched his fists. This wasn't something for himself nor for Jiang Ning or even Lin Group. This responsibility was way heavier than he imagined.

He felt a heavy weight on his shoulders for the first time. But this heavy feeling also made him become mature.

"You've done a good job," said Li Zhengshang as he walked in.

He had been listening outside all this while and didn't interrupt Li Genhong.

He was the head of the Li family, but he was suddenly feeling deeply consoled now.

He used to find his son too childish and immature, not steady enough, overly arrogant and

NH

complacent, and was sure that he would get into trouble sooner or later.

When his son offended Jiang Ning, he thought that the Li family would disappear off the face of the earth.

But in a sudden twist, after the crisis blew over, Jiang Ning actually gave Li Genhong a chance to change completely.

He had done them such a big favor!

“From today onwards, I think it’s your turn to be the head of the Li family,” said Li Zhengshang with a smile. He didn’t know how to describe his feelings right now.

Even though the Li family had paid a high price and lost everything they used to have in Las Vegas, he firmly believed that the Li family of the future would be very different.

“Me? Then what about you?” smiled Li Genhong.

“I’ll be your assistant,” said Li Zhengshang. “I might be old, but I’m still useful. I might not be of a lot of use, so you still have to count on yourself. The future of the Li family...is in your hands.”

He stood in front of Li Genhong and patted his shoulder.

“Remember who gave you this chance.”

“I understand.”

NH


Li Genhong nodded solemnly.


Jiang Ning!

He was going to etch this name on his heart so that he could remind himself of what he had to do, what he should not do, and what he must become!

Without Jiang Ning, the Li family might enjoy a few more glorious years, but Li Genhong would definitely have gotten into trouble by the time he took over the family and the family would eventually perish...

But now, he had the chance to let the Li family become a completely different family from before!

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Just as Li Genhong had guessed.

After his plans were passed on to the rest in the army, about 90% of them chose to stay.

Some of them believed that Li Genhong was able to achieve this, and they wanted to help the Li family to complete this noble task. Some of them didn't know which side to choose, so they went with the majority.

Some of them even took the initiative to contribute the prize money that they had just received!

Li Genhong didn't expect this reaction at all.

He now understood how much the word 'homeland' meant to these people.

He didn't delay any further and immediately gave orders to reorganize the men and got them to rest well. They were going to move first thing the next day.

Time was the most important thing now.

He had to take over that area and protect it before anybody else discovered that mine. He had to make sure his territory was impenetrable.

The name of the Li family army spread quickly.

They had gained fame at the expense of the Purple Moon Mercenary Army. In war, either one died or the other did.

NH

Everyone was used to it.

But nobody expected the Li family to shift camp.

First thing the next morning, they started their huge move. They brought whatever they could and abandoned whatever they couldn't.

More than ten cars kicked up the sand of the desert, and the eyes of all the soldiers in the cars were resolute.

They all felt that they weren't going to a new campsite, but their new homeland!

Jiang Ning sat in the car and didn't say anything about Li Genhong's decision.

He already said that he was going to let the Li family take control of this region, and he wasn't going to interfere.

As long as nothing went wrong, he wasn't going to say anything.

Once they arrived at their destination, Jiang Ning took a walk around. This place was really so empty that calling it a wasteland sounded too kind. He had no idea how on earth Li Genhong could have possibly discovered a mine he wanted here.

That must have taken so much effort to achieve.

It was clear that Li Zhengshang and Li Genhong were very afraid to disappoint Jiang Ning.

NH

“Troop One, Two and Three, clear the place!” Li Genhong started making arrangements. “Four shall put out place markers and make sure everyone knows this place is ours. The rest of the troops can start building the foundations!”

“I want to build up our campsite in the shortest time possible!”

This was the most basic goal for the day, and it would ensure that they had this place.

While everyone was sleeping the night before, Li Genhong had stayed up all night to perfect his plans.

He had plans on where to build each building, designs for their defenses, a school, a hospital, canteens...

It was as if he was building a small town!

Li Genhong was highly educated and was well exposed to many things. Planning these things out wasn't a big problem, and there was no need for anything too professional at the moment.

He was just going by his experience and gut feel first.

He had more than a thousand men, so he had plenty of laborers. But more importantly, everyone seemed to be even more united now.

Everyone seemed to have only one thought in their minds – they weren't doing this for others or for the Li family, but they were doing this for

NH

themselves! To build a home for themselves!

Even Jiang Ning couldn't help but nod his head in approval at this. Li Genhong had done a good job.

Within three days, there was some semblance of a campsite already. Everyone had worked very hard, and they inevitably drew a lot of attention to themselves.

There were six other mercenary armies within 100 kilometer radius around them.

Purple Moon Mercenary Army was the strongest one previously, but they had been destroyed by the Li family's army, so this seemingly small and weak army immediately came into the spotlight.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

The Li family army drew even more attention after they moved camp and took up such a huge piece of land. On top of that, they poured in so much money and labor to develop the land.

This made a lot of people very uneasy.

If that was just a piece of wasteland that nobody wanted, they wouldn't care. But now someone was developing the place and making it useful, so that made them uncomfortable.

Nobody wanted the Li family army to rise up and become the second Purple Moon Mercenary Army.

Trouble quietly began to brew.

Li Genhong was already prepared for these people and such trouble.

He was going to take a tough stance against them!

If he was tough enough, his commanders would be tough, and all the soldiers under them would be tough too.

None of them was going to allow others to ruin the home that they had built!

Li Genhong had already bought up a lot of firearms, and they continued their recruitment exercise. They were so well known and celebrated now, so there were many people fighting to join the Li family army.

NH

But Li Genhong was sure that he couldn't take more than 3,000 for now.

He had limited resources, so 3,000 was the most reasonable number.

Quality was more important than quantity, especially in such an environment. If everyone was united in doing something, then their efficiency would be much higher.

Li Genhong had forcibly fought back all harassment attempts, so his name started to become famous as well.

Everyone knew that the Li family had changed heads, and the new head of the family had a completely different style from the previous one.

And that made everyone around them even more nervous and anxious.

"I'm surprised that other people have become wary of us so quickly." Li Genhong shook his head and said self-deprecatingly, "Just a few days ago, they probably thought that the Li family army would die at the hands of the Purple Moon Mercenary Army. And now?"

He had expected this. There were only so many resources to go round. If one had more, someone else had less, and nobody was willing to fall behind.

But most importantly, they were the least experienced.

NH

In fact, this current army had been formed for only a few days.

“They’ve joined hands,” said Li Zhengshang. “The informants have reported that the five small mercenary armies around us have agreed privately to join hands and stop us from expanding.”

In the past, everyone only fought for themselves. Nobody would think of joining hands with others.

But to their surprise, the Li family had grown so quickly that these opponents had no choice but to work with one another.

Jiang Ning looked at the two of them.

“So what do both of you want to do?”

“We’re going to fight!” said Li Genhong. “We don’t have a choice now, so we have to fight! We have to fight all the way!”

He clenched his fists. “Also, we have to lose once.”

A proud army was bound to be defeated. He couldn’t allow this sort of attitude to surface among his army. After they won two battles in a row, some of them had begun to become complacent, and this was a very dangerous mindset to have.

Li Genhong was now in control of all this, including his men’s emotions.

NH

“Mr Jiang, I would like to increase the ability of the Li family’s army in general.” He took a deep breath. “I’m afraid I will have to trouble Brother Gou and the rest.”

The Li family army’s real opponents weren’t these clowns around them, but those truly powerful people in this region.

Their responsibility was to guard this mine well, so it was inevitable that they would face great opponents in the future.

So they had to increase their ability right now, so that the Li family army was able to protect themselves and guard their own territory!

“Sure.” Jiang Ning didn’t say more.

This was part of his own plan as well. In order to get to his final aim, everything had to be done step by step for it to be interesting.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

The Li family's new campsite was fully lit. Everyone was united and ready to fight a big battle!

The night grew dark.

Li Genhong had organized the 3,000 men into troops, and kept the original ten troops, but they now had 300 men each!

Three troops would patrol the border and make sure that the camp remained safe, four troops would continue with the building work and try to complete the facilities within the shortest time possible.

The last three troops would rest. With this rotation plan, it ensured that everyone got enough rest, enough work was completed each day, and everyone was kept safe.

The new campsite was built at an incredible speed. The maximum amount of resources and manpower had been put into it, so it was only natural that it moved along swiftly.

After all, everyone hoped to see their new homeland as soon as possible.

"Finish these few foundations and everyone can go and rest. We'll start building the houses tomorrow!"

Troop Eight's commander didn't bother wearing clothes and allowed his perspiration to cover his body.

NH

His muscular body gleamed brightly under the lights and was brighter than their eyes.

As the buildings and other facilities went up, the look in these people's eyes became gentler and wasn't as aggressive and violent as they were on the battlefield.

These buildings would become part of their home in the future. There were schools, hospitals, playgrounds for their children...

All these were things they never dared to even dream about in the past!

"Leave one team here to guard the place, the rest can go back and sleep, we'll exchange places tomorrow," said the Troop Eight commander loudly.

"Yes, sir!" replied the troops in unison.

Everyone dismissed themselves accordingly.

There was a pair of eyes among the group that was left behind to guard the place that kept looking around as if he was searching for something.

"I'll go over there and take a look," he said before walking to one side. Since nobody noticed him, he swiftly disappeared into the darkness and quietly headed to other parts of the camp.

He had joined the Li family's army for three days now.

NH

Over the past three days, he had behaved like everyone else, and nobody could sense any difference about him.

But now, he seemed to be a completely different person. Even the look in his eyes was different from normal.

“There must be something that’s not right about this place.”

He carefully made his way around and went towards the deepest parts of the camp.

Over the past few days, he had confirmed all the areas that were being patrolled, so he could avoid detection and move into the deepest parts of the camp.

The Li family had moved to a new campsite and it looked like they merely wanted to expand, but for those who had been observing the Li family’s army, they knew things weren’t so simple.

That was because Lin Group was the one backing the Li family!

That person moved very nimbly, so he was clearly not new at this.

He soon completely disappeared from sight.

Meanwhile.

Over at Silicon Valley.

Some bigwigs of tech companies were seated

NH

together.

They confirmed with Hayson the last time that they had nothing to do with Lin Group. In that case, they weren't going to reject the meat that had come knocking on their doors.

RIIING...

The phone rang.

One of them picked up the call and his smile brightened.

"Ok. You continue to observe secretly."

He hung up and turned to look back at the rest with a smug smile on his face.

"It's exactly as we guessed. That place is not simple at all, and it's hiding something," he said with a laugh. "Lin Group has poached all those tech experts, and now they've discovered a mine. I'm guessing that the mine contains very pure silica. What do you think they're trying to do?"

"They're probably trying to overtake us, but somehow it sounds hilarious to me."

"HAHAHA! They've found a mine for us!"

"They're sending it to our doorstep!"

NH

“But Lin Group is pretty smart. They’ve formed their own little army to guard the mine, but yet they seem stupid too. Don’t they know that that sort of place isn’t a place for unimportant characters like themselves?”

The room of bosses laughed merrily as if they were already sure of taking Lin Group down.

If Lin Group were still small, they wouldn’t take any interest.

But now that Lin Group kept growing and they had the chance to reap benefits, they started to eye the company.

And now, Lin Group even wanted part of the integrated circuits industry. That was an industry that they had monopolized for a long time now!

They had taken away talents from China and didn’t allow China to have the ability to do their own research. That was how domineering they were.

And now, Lin Group wanted to turn the tables on them?

No way.

“I have a US\$100 million deal for you, are you interested?” The leader of this group made a phone call. “I want you to finish off the Li family’s army in the shortest time possible, take over their current campsite and hand it over to me.”

“I don’t care if you’ve heard of the Li family army

NH

or not. That's the mission, the reward is US\$100 million."

He hung up the phone after that.

He never liked to say too much, especially when it was such a simple matter.

The few of them sat together in the midst of the smoke of their cigars.

Every time these men got together, it meant that they were going to hit jackpot again.

Meanwhile.

Back in the Middle East.

The middle of the night was the best time to think.

Li Genhong hadn't slept yet.

He was thinking about where he hadn't done enough, where he hadn't been strict or detailed enough.

He was also thinking about their future direction, resources, funding and even training of the soldiers.

It was as if he had started a large company that had just opened for business. How far it could go depended a lot on whether he could build a good foundation now.

"Mr Jiang should have gone to bed by now," said

NH

Li Genhong. "There are some things I'm not sure about, I'll ask him tomorrow."

He massaged his neck as he saw his father walk towards him. Everything looked good to go in his mind, but he still felt that there were areas that he was unsure about.

He felt that his foresight and ideas were insufficient, so he had to trouble Jiang Ning about these matters.

Li Genhong always felt that Jiang Ning's could see way further than anyone else.

He seemed to be standing on top of a mountain and could see every person, matter and situation as he controlled everything.

If there was something he hadn't considered, Jiang Ning would have already noticed it. If there was something he hadn't done well, Jiang Ning would have realized it by now too.

But if he didn't ask about it, Jiang Ning wouldn't say anything and just allow him to work it out on his own.

What a great pressure he felt!

Li Genhong was confident of himself, but he also knew that he had to take responsibility for the things he did and couldn't let anything go wrong.

"Ask tomorrow then," Li Zhengshang nodded in agreement. "This is a very important matter and we can't afford any problems or mistakes."

NH

“Besides, since Mr Jiang is here, it’s a good chance to learn from him.”

The two of them sat down together. It had been a long time since they had been able to have such a heart to heart talk. But now, in order to expand their army and to build this new homeland well, they ended up talking through the night.

“There will always be trouble. But the more trouble you go through, the faster you mature,” sighed Li Zhengshang.

Jiang Ning was backing them, so they had the confidence to do anything they had to and to make any decision they had to.

In the past, they didn’t have this backing. So if they still couldn’t get anything done with this backing, then they’d really be an embarrassment!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Jiang Ning had given them time, money and the support of highly skilled fighters. The resources from Jiang Ning was even more than what the Li family enjoyed in the past.

If they still couldn't produce results, then they weren't only an embarrassment, but they would also have disappointed Jiang Ning.

The two of them could feel the pressure on themselves, but this was also their motivation at the same time.

The two of them stayed up and made sure they did their best to patch any loopholes so that they could build an impenetrable fortress.

Meanwhile, in an old castle in the middle of Saudi Arabia.

The ones who could occupy this territory was clearly the most powerful mercenary army in this region.

The Holy Sword Mercenary Army!

According to the legend, they had a call from god to descend on earth and seek justice for the people with their holy sword.

But of course, this was just a legend and they were the ones who spread this story so that they could gather some influence among the people.

The castle was protected on many levels and every mercenary soldier patrolling the place were armed with real guns.

NH

This was definitely the safest place in all of the Middle East.

The head of the Holy Sword Mercenary Army, Yeshma, had just put down the phone and looked at the information in his hands with some interest.

“US\$100 million, eh?” Yeshma narrowed his eyes as if he had already received the money.

He had done a lot of such things. In fact, he remained here because he specialized in doing such things.

“Is that all the information there is on the Li family’s army? Or are they well hidden and too difficult to investigate?”

Yeshma was very careful.

He couldn’t afford to be careless. A few years ago, he had underestimated his enemy and offended someone he shouldn’t have. The top three mercenary armies in this region has suffered terrible losses as a result.

He would never forget how five of the eight commanders under him had died just like that!

He had also lost more than a hundred good fighters. The other two mercenary armies were no better, and had lost even more than he did.

That person...

He shuddered to even think of his name. He

NH

couldn't believe that there was such a terrifying person in this world.

Some years had already passed, but he was still filled with reverence for him and became very cautious in everything he did. Even if he had to lose money, he had to make sure he didn't offend the wrong person and die for nothing.

"That's all we have," replied his subordinate seriously. "This Li family used to be based in Las Vegas and was in control of the Chinese Chamber of Commerce, which was basically an oppressive and plundering business too."

"But of course, their scale was nothing compared to us. But for some reason, they suddenly collapsed overnight, left Las Vegas and came to the Middle East."

"From the looks of it, they're probably backed by someone powerful, and I can confirm that their backer is not from the Third World. I got someone to make sure of this."

Holy Sword was financially backed by someone from the Third World. Otherwise, they wouldn't be in this position today.

"Have you found out who's backing these fellows?" asked Yeshma.

He had to be very careful and not slip up at all.

"We've confirmed that it's a company from within China called Lin Group."

NH

“Lin Group?” Yeshma frowned slightly and nodded as he mumbled quietly, “As long as it’s not a Jiang.”

If the company belonged to a Jiang, he wouldn’t touch these people even if the \$100 million was right in front of him now.

He had heard that man had left the battlefield and was nowhere to be found now. But since he was so powerful, domineering and brazen, he would definitely use his own surname to set up a company.

Yeshma was sure of that.

Since the company didn’t belong to a Jiang, he wasn’t worried anymore.

PAK!

He flung the information onto the desk and his expression darkened. “This Li family army has gone ahead to set themselves up without checking in with the three major mercenary armies, right? I won’t acknowledge their existence!”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Yeshma's subordinate immediately understood what Yeshma meant by that.

If Yeshma didn't acknowledge their existence, then it was not necessary for them to exist anymore.

"There are a total of six mercenary armies in the southwestern region. Purple Moon Mercenary Army has been annihilated, and the remaining five intend to encircle and attack the Li family army. But they're also wary and are afraid of attacking them," said his subordinate. "They lack the confidence."

"I'll give them that confidence!" Yeshma waved his hand dramatically. "Tell them to launch an attack and destroy the Li family's army! Besides the land that the campsite is on, they can have anything they want!"

It would be best if he didn't have to do this personally and waste his energy.

His subordinate immediately replied, "I'll get this arranged right now!"

He left the room quickly.

Yeshma leaned back in his chair and rapped his fingers lightly against the desk.

Once bitten, twice shy.

He still often woke up in the middle of the night because he thought that there was a shadow by his bed that would kill him in the next moment!

NH

After so many years, he still dared not attack a Chinese because he was afraid of offending that man.

“US\$100 million? It’s getting easier and easier to earn money these days.”

Yeshma smiled so brightly that his wrinkles could be seen and he looked so happy and relaxed.

He waved his hand and a few women sashayed out to stand in one row.

“Whose turn is it today?” he smiled with his eyes half closed. “We’ll draw lots as usual...”

.....

Yeshma’s orders soon reached the southwestern region where Jiang Ning was.

The five mercenary armies immediately came to a decision when they got the news.

It was late at night, but the heads of the five armies gathered together to talk about attacking the Li family’s army.

“Everyone knows what Commander Yeshma means, right?”

“This Li family army was formed without getting permission from Commander Yeshma, so since it’s not a legitimate army, they shouldn’t exist.”

“I was still worried before this, but it looks like we’ve overthought it. Let’s get ready to launch an

NH

attack. Just like what Commander Yeshma said, besides that piece of land, we'll split the rest of the spoils equally!"

"Alright, let's do this!"

"We'll attack once dawn breaks and catch them unawares!"

In less than ten minutes, they reached a consensus.

It was already 3AM, but the five armies began to make arrangements under the cover of darkness. They started to move their men and equipment towards the Li family camp and surrounded them from all directions.

They had to move as quickly as they could so that the Li family wouldn't be able to expand any further.

It was best to completely stamp them out while they were weak so that they could not grow to become trouble for them.

They had been very worried that the sudden rise of this Li family army would destroy them one day since they managed to destroy the Purple Moon Mercenary Army.

If they wanted to get rid of any threats, they had to attack first!

Meanwhile.

Li Genhong was still awake.

NH

The map in front of him had been scribbled all over.

He had scribbled notes on the facilities, future expansion, defenses and used almost everything in his brain.

This was the first time he felt that he was very inadequate and needed to learn more and go through more challenges.

Thankfully, Jiang Ning was here, so he could go ahead and do whatever he wanted without worrying about anything. It was such a wonderful feeling.

SWOOSH!

Suddenly, a figure appeared behind him and Li Genhong nearly exclaimed in fright, only to find that it was Jiang Ning.

“Prepare to fight,” said Jiang Ning calmly.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Jiang Ning spoke before Li Genhong said anything.

“Fight?” Li Genhong was still confused. It was 3AM now. What fight?

“The enemy is already on your tail. If you don’t fight, would you rather die?” Jiang Ning glanced at him. “The other five mercenary armies in the region have joined hands to destroy your army. Are you nervous?”

Li Genhong gulped.

He knew that those five armies wouldn’t just let his army rise up without doing anything.

But they were acting too quickly too.

He had just moved here a few days ago and he hadn’t even finished building basic facilities on this campsite, but they were already here to attack him?

“I’ll prepare to fight right now!” Li Genhong didn’t care about how he felt anymore and quickly ran out.

“Enemy attack! Enemy attack! Prepare to fight!”

His commands reached his ten commanders quickly and all of them immediately went to get their troops ready without doubting Li Genhong’s words at all.

They had been equally tense these past few days because they knew that they would definitely run

NH

into problems along the way.

But they didn't expect trouble to arrive so quickly!

"Prepare to fight!"

"Since they dare to come here, don't let them leave!"

"Fight and protect our homeland!"

Everyone started getting riled up. The lights were all on and the weapons were ready in no time. All the men were ready for war!

They moved too quickly!

Their quick reaction shocked those men who had infiltrated the army.

It had taken the entire night for them to send out news to Silicon Valley, then for Silicon Valley to instruct Yeshma, and finally for the five armies in the southwestern region to come together to attack the Li family army.

Had their plans been discovered so quickly?

They were already prepared for a fight!

"Young Master Li, there's no news from our informants. Is the enemy reaching us soon?" asked Troop Four's commander. "If the five armies join hands, that's possibly more than 5,000 men!"

"They're here!" Li Genhong would never doubt

NH

Jiang Ning's words.

“Regardless of how many people they have, if they dare to damage or destroy our homeland, then they can forget about leaving this place!” Li Genhong raised an arm and murder spewed from his face. “Send orders out to fight those people hard!”

“Yes, sir!”

Jiang Ning sat at the back with a calm expression on his face.

“Big Boss, there's more than 5,000 men out there. Also, there are some highly skilled fighters mixed in among the armies, so I think they're going to launch a secret attack.”

The wolves had already planted themselves a good distance away from the campsite to keep a close watch on the area. Once there was any movement, they would report to Jiang Ning immediately.

They discovered that the coalition army of the five mercenary armies added up to more people than expected, and there were several highly skilled fighters among them.

It was obvious that they wanted to use these huge numbers to overrun the camp, then get the highly skilled fighters to fight their way in and kill off all the people in power.

Jiang Ning looked at Brother Gou.

NH

“All of you are itching to fight, right?”

He knew these wolves well and knew that they couldn't wait to fight. A battlefield like this region was best for firing them up.

“It's time we made an appearance.”

Brother Gou grinned. Fei was their trump card and was hiding in the darkness, and probably didn't need to appear at all. But the wolves could go ahead and have a good fight!

“Go and have fun,” said Jiang Ning.

“Yes, Big Boss!” replied Brother Gou happily before disappearing into the darkness.

Meanwhile!

They were here!

Troop Three's commander kept an ear on the ground and frowned deeply.

“They're here! They're here!”

He could tell that a lot of people were coming towards them. “Prepare to fight! Prepare to fight!”

KA KA KA!

The sound of safety catches being unlocked filled the air. They were all prepared for a fierce battle ahead.

In no time, the first car headlamps shone from a

NH

distance, then a second set of headlamps, then a third...



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

The cars were driving very quickly!

Were they going to just drive straight into the campsite and engage in close combat?

“Fire!” someone shouted and they pulled their triggers.

BANG!

Bullets sliced through the air and a loud blast signaled the start of the battle.

In an instant, a terrifying battle ensued. It was only 5AM and the sun was still hidden, but the fiery battle was enough to light up the place.

“ATTACK!!”

“Protect our homeland! Brothers, attack!”

“Kill them all! Kill them all!”

The shouts never stopped and all of them were determined.

But they never thought that this coalition army would be so much more powerful than them. They were stronger than them in terms of ammunition, and one group even managed to enter their camp under the cover of darkness.

They had barged their way in!

“Capture the commander-in-chief of the Li family army!”

NH

SWOOSH!

SWOOSH!

SWOOSH!

Both sides were still firing away at each other while this group moved extremely. These men were definitely special soldiers who were very well trained!

“Get them!” Troop Six’s commander spotted them and sent his men to block them. “They must not enter the camp!”

Several groups of soldiers ran towards them but they couldn’t block them at all.

Those special soldiers moved too quickly!

“Commander! Send backup!”

There wasn’t enough light and their guns didn’t hit any of these men. But once they got close, the Li family army was no match for these special soldiers.

More than ten of them were killed in an instant!

Troop Six’s commander’s eyes reddened.

All the men who were killed were his subordinates!

“Get them! It doesn’t matter what it takes!” he roared as he pulled out a long knife and dashed over as well. “How dare you try to enter from my

NH

side?! You'll have to kill me first!"

He swung his knife hard, but those black shadows nimbly avoided all his attacks.

The commander immediately felt a chill down his spine because he could sense that one of them was right behind him.

His back was not protected!

He was in danger!

"Commander! Watch out!"

"He's behind you! Watch out!"

"Stop!"

The other soldiers shouted loudly and wanted to help, but they were too late. These men in black moved so quickly and were so powerful. The soldiers had never come across such terrifying fighters before.

"Even if I die, you're going to die together with me!"

The commander didn't care anymore. He forced himself to spin around as he brought his blade down fiercely. But the blade didn't hit anything!

His body had already lost its balance and he saw that the man in black was squatting on the ground. Those eyes were both murderous and seemed to be mocking him at the same time!

NH

He had already predicted the commander's reaction and was waiting for the commander to make a mistake and die with one fatal blow!

He was going to die...

The commander wasn't afraid of dying and didn't care. He was just upset that he hadn't managed to kill off another enemy in the process!

The black blade of the knife didn't even gleam in the night, but the murderous aura it exuded made one's hair stand on end.

PFFT!

There was a muffled sound and the commander's eyes immediately widened!

He watched in shock as the man in black who was right in front of him collapsed onto the ground!

There was another man behind him, and he was as muscular as a mountain!

Before the commander could wrap his head around what happened, he saw a mouthful of white teeth.

"Why are you still in a daze? These bloody fuckers are coming in and you're still dreaming?!" roared Number Five as he kicked the man in black on the ground away. He looked up and shouted, "Whoever dares to come here will get his neck bloody broken!"

NH

So vicious!

So domineering!

He was barbaric that the commander felt his heart tremble in fear.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Before the Troop Six commander understood what was going on, several shadows appeared behind him.

They were like wolves and tigers!

The aggressive and domineering presence they had made him shudder.

These men were part of the Li family army?

When did the Li family army have such terrifying fighters?

He widened his eyes and before he could say anything, Number Five and the other wolves started engaging in a fight with the fighters from the enemy camp.

It was a terrifying battle.

The angry roars made his eardrums hurt, while the howling noises made his heart nearly leap out of his mouth.

CRAAACK!

That was the crisp sound of bones being broken from a kick!

BA-THUMP!

BA-THUMP!

The commander had gone through many battles over the years and had witnessed a lot of killings.

NH

He could become a commander of his own troop because he had proved himself in battle, but now, he was completely stunned.

“Why are you still standing there?!” A voice shouted at him and the commander turned to look. Someone was shouting at him, “These fellows have made it all the way in here! If you let any one of these men get away, I’ll break your legs!”

The commander shuddered and finally snapped out of his daze.

“Men! Make sure these fuckers don’t get away! All of you can forget about escaping!”

He sent orders and his men surrounded all the intruders.

They didn’t need to attack them, because the wolves were enough to kill off all these men.

Their job was to surround the enemies so that they didn’t get the chance to escape!

The fight got even more intense and the howls and growls became more aggressive and insane.

They watched as the fighters from the enemy collapsed one after another. Either their limbs were broken, or their ribs were broken. They all fell to the ground and howled miserably...

In just five minutes, not a single enemy soldier was left standing!

NH

GULP!

The commander gulped and all his soldiers gulped too.

The shock and disbelief they felt made them look confused and they weren't sure how to express their emotions right now.

“Big...Brother?”

The commander saw someone walking his way and wasn't sure how he should address this man. ‘Big Brother’ wouldn't go wrong.

“Who's your Big Brother?” The man walked into the light and his face became clearer. Brother Gou pointed at his own face. “Do you have a brother with such fair skin?”

The commander was stunned. Their skin color was different, but they were on the same side.

“Drag these people out and frighten the enemy!”

Brother Gou didn't care to waste time talking. They had incapacitated all the fighters that tried to infiltrate the camp, so it was time to throw them out and scare the coalition army out there.

“Yes, sir!”

The commander didn't dare to say anything. He got his men to drag the enemy soldiers out like a bunch of dead dogs.

Outside, the battle was still as fierce as ever.

NH

The blasts never stopped ringing, and the coalition army was surprised by how courageous and fearless the Li family army was.

They never thought that a newly formed mercenary army would fight this hard. Were they all nuts?

Weren't they afraid to die?

“As long as the special troop takes down their commander-in-chief, we don't have to fight so hard with these people.”

Nobody wanted to be worn down by a battle. Even losing one soldier was still a loss, and it was best to pay the smallest price to achieve their aim.

They had already arranged for troop of special soldiers made up of three highly skilled fighters from each mercenary army. Their aim was to infiltrate the camp and capture Li Zhengshang and Li Genhong!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

They had to capture the commander-in-chief in order to defeat the rest of the army!

Besides, since this army was just formed, they probably didn't have any specially trained soldiers or troops.

But just then...

A terrible howl pierced the sky and everyone seemed to stop their attacks at the same time. Everything seemed to have fallen silent.

Only that terrible howl pierced through the dark night and into everyone's hearts.

"Here are your special troop soldiers! They shall all die for entering the camp!"

Troop Six's commander brought his long knife down on the man in front of him.

PFFFT!

Blood spurted everywhere.

The men behind him all raised their weapons.

And brought them down!

That scene was terrifying to watch.

Blood spurted in all directions and heads went rolling.

Everything seemed to have frozen suddenly.

NH

The leaders of the five armies clearly witnessed the heads of their special soldiers leave the rest of their body!

How...how did they lose so quickly?

And the price of losing was to die!

“Anybody who dares to trespass the Li family army’s camp shall die without any mercy shown!”

These words rang loudly like the sound of a death knell. It rang loudly in the ears of all the coalition army soldiers.

It was as if they had heard a warning to warn them that the Li family army camp was a forbidden territory!

Anyone who tried to enter without permission would die!

In an instant, the atmosphere between the two sides changed.

The morale of the coalition army immediately took a dive, while the furor among the Li family army instantly hit its peak.

They had highly skilled fighters guarding their camp!

Nobody was allowed to even step in! So what were they afraid of?

They just had to guard the outside and kill their enemies, and that would be enough!

NH

“Attack!” shouted Troop One’s commander angrily.

“Attack!” chimed in Troop Two’s commander.

“ATTACK!!” yelled Troop Three’s commander hoarsely.

“Attack! Attack! Attack!”

Their angry roars filled the sky.

Their confidence shot through the roof.

They were all like grim reapers who had been awakened. They were brave and fearless, and didn’t seem to be threatened by bullets nor poison.

They were so frightening now!

The battle was soon unbalanced and the pressure from the Li family army immediately pressed down on the coalition army. Once the balance was off, it was hard to tip it back in their favor again.

The Li family army became even more aggressive!

Some of the commanders led their men forward and didn’t care about anything else.

“Kill them all! Leave no one alive!”

The sun was slowly rising.

NH

But the firing on the battlefield slowly faded.

The scene in front of them was tragic, and blood flowed like a river.

The heads of the five mercenary armies had made a run for it already. They didn't have any choice, because Brother Gou and the wolves had actually infiltrated their coalition army.

Two of the heads felt that they could still fight on and stopped running, and they died in that battle as well.

The five armies had joined hands...but failed miserably!

This battle was over in two hours, and the Li family army won!

"If others don't cross me, I won't cross them either," shouted Li Genhong. "But if they cross me, then I'm going to get rid of them completely!"

"The five armies joined hands in hope of destroying my army? They can dream on! Since they dared to attack us, they have to pay the price!" he declared loudly. "One, Three and Six shall stay and guard the camp, the rest of you shall run after the remnant of the coalition army! I want to make sure that these five mercenary armies disappear from the southwestern region today!"

"Yes, Young Master Li!" They sounded the battle horn again.

NH

This was a battle that would happen sooner or later. They had already started this fight, so they were going to fight them to the very end since they had the upper hand anyway.

The morale of the Li family soldiers was high and everyone was feeling fearless. The seven troops had nearly 2,000 men in total, so they charged towards the other mercenary armies and swept across them without leaving anyone alive.

In just one day, the entire southwestern region was only left with one mercenary army – the Li family army!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

War was cruel and was tragic.

Nobody liked war, but there was no other way to survive in this region.

If you didn't kill your enemies, your enemies would kill you. If you died, then your families would not be protected, and they would end up dying sooner or later...

That was how cruel reality was.

With a new homeland, they had the chance to protect their own families, so the Li family army went all out.

The other five mercenary armies in the vicinity joined hands and intended to completely annihilate the Li family army, but the Li family army turned out to be way more powerful than they imagined.

So the five army coalition ended up being the ones who were annihilated.

The southwestern region was left with only the Li family army.

Li Genhong didn't think of taking this chance to expand. His plans for a campsite was only within that boundary he had drawn when he first came here. Getting this area built up was enough for him.

The resources they plundered from the coalition army formed a little mountain.

But nobody thought of splitting the loot, because they needed a lot of resources right now. Since they were building their homeland, the soldiers felt that they had to bear some of the responsibility as well, and not let Li Zhengshang and Li Genhong take on everything.

Li Genhong called his butler over to take stock and calculate everything they had, as well as to make plans on how to use everything properly.

The ten commanders stood to one side and quietly waited for Li Genhong to finish his arrangements.

Once everything had been sorted out, the butler got some men to store these things away.

“Young Master Li, those men...” Troop Six’s commander had been waiting to ask this question for a long time, and only spoke up when he saw that Li Genhong was done. “Those men are also part of the Li family army?”

None of them knew that the Li family had such highly skilled fighters.

They now realized that they had been able to finish off Purple Moon Mercenary Army back then probably only because these fighters had been helping them secretly.

“That’s right,” Li Genhong didn’t hide this from them. “Not just them. We have an even more powerful fighter secretly guarding this place.”

“There’s someone else besides them?”

The commander's eyes widened.

He had witnessed what the wolves could do. The ten commanders added together probably couldn't compare to them!

But there was someone who was even more powerful than them?

"That's right. Do not underestimate the strength of the Li family army, but don't overestimate what others can do too. I guarantee you that nobody can cause any harm to our homeland."

Li Genhong was very serious. "As long as we're united enough, and we're brave enough, nobody can defeat us!"

All of them took in a breath of cold air.

The Li family was actually so powerful!

They all knew that anybody who came to this war torn region was definitely backed by someone powerful, otherwise they wouldn't last long in this place.

The Li family hadn't arrived here for too long, but the entire southwestern region was theirs now. Very few people could rise up so quickly.

But the Li family had done it!

They hadn't just succeeded in gaining territory, but they also gained loyal and happy followers.

"Young Master Li, then could you ask them to..."

Troop One's commander pondered for a moment and exchanged glances with the other commanders. "Could you ask them to train us? We want to become stronger!"

Jiang Ning said that as long as they wanted to become stronger, they would get the opportunity to.

They didn't really believe him back then, but now they realized that they had underestimated Jiang Ning's ability!

"You can go and ask them yourselves," said Li Genhong. "They will respect real warriors."

"Yes, Young Master Li!" All the commanders were excited to hear this and hurried ran off to look for the wolves.

They were commanders of this 3,000 men army, but in front of Brother Gou and the wolves, all ten of them stood up straight!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

“Lift up your heads! Puff your chest out! Keep your stomach in! Hold your butt high!” shouted Troop One’s commander to the rest. He then said respectfully to the wolves, “Sirs, please go ahead and inspect us!”

Brother Gou eyed them. He didn’t like these silly rules and just waved his hand. “Just say what you want.”

“Sirs, we would like to ask you to train us!” replied Troop One’s commander.

After this battle, they realized the power of having a special troop of soldiers. They also realized that in order to protect their new home well, they had to increase their fighting ability as well.

They didn’t just need ordinary soldier combat skills, but also a special troop of soldiers!

They had to become stronger themselves too, otherwise, they could not lead the men under them.

Brother Gou looked at them and scoffed quietly. “I’m afraid you guys might not be able to take it.”

“Impossible!” said Troop Six’s commander. “If you can do it, we can too!”

Brother Gou walked over and stood in front of him to meet his eyes.

“Are you sure?”

“Yes, I’m sure!” barked the commander in reply.

NH

“Ok, I hope you won’t regret this.” Brother Gou narrowed his eyes. “Get 30 of your men from each troop to train with us. How many are left at the end of the training depends on your willpower and resilience!”

“Yes, sir!”

The ten commanders left and quickly ran to pick their men.

They couldn’t miss this opportunity.

“Challenging us, eh?” Brother Gou watched the men leave. “If Big Boss hadn’t given prior instructions, I wouldn’t have fallen for that!”

After being groomed by the Legend of Shengcheng for so long, Brother Gou had become more intelligent now.

Meanwhile.

Li Zhengshang was reporting the current situation to Jiang Ning.

“We found out what happened. The commander of the biggest mercenary army, Yeshma, sent out orders to use this coalition army to destroy us. But I’m sure he never expected this to happen.”

The Li family was backed by Jiang Ning!

Jiang Ning didn’t have to personally be involved all this time, so Li Zhengshang wasn’t worried.

“Yeshma?” Jiang Ning laughed.

NH

“Have you heard of him?” asked Li Zhengshang. “There are probably about a hundred mercenary armies in this region of all sizes, but the Holy Sword Mercenary Army is definitely one of the most powerful around. They’re consistently ranked in the top three, and is usually ranked as the top.”

“Apparently they’re backed by someone in the Third World, so they have advanced weaponry and more than enough funding. Not just anyone can afford to offend them.”

He frowned. “I don’t know how the Li family army became one of their targets.”

Li Zhengshang knew that the Li family army couldn’t hold up against a huge and powerful army like the Holy Sword Mercenary Army for sure. They were poles apart now.

If Yeshma decided to launch an attack, then they were definitely doomed.

“I know him,” said Jiang Ning calmly. “In fact, I’ve known him for a long time.”

“A long time?” Li Zhengshang was stunned.

“Alright now, if it’s him, then that’s easy to settle. I’ll just drop by and say hello.” Jiang Ning waved his hands and didn’t elaborate further.

Now that the entire southwest was cleaned out, they just needed to remain stable and develop themselves. As for any external threats, Jiang Ning didn’t think they were a threat.

NH

He didn't know that the Holy Sword Mercenary Army was so formidable now. Back then...it didn't matter. Talking about it would only frighten other people.

Li Zhengshang was still confused and didn't know what Jiang Ning meant by saying hello.

Nobody that became a target of the Holy Sword Mercenary Army survived!

That was the Holy Sword Mercenary Army!

They were backed by someone from the Third World, but Jiang Ning could settle it just by saying hello?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Li Zhengshang knew that Jiang Ning was formidable, but he didn't think Jiang Ning could get into the Third World.

He had heard about this Third World. That was a gathering of the most powerful people in the world, and they had enough money, power and status to completely control the rest of the globe!

Jiang Ning just had to say hello?

He had doubts in his heart, but he didn't say anything. After all, Jiang Ning always gave him the feeling that as long as Jiang Ning wanted to do something, he would be able to get it done.

"Just focus on doing what you're supposed to do and build this place properly, then start the mining work carefully," said Jiang Ning. "Lin Group has already established an R&D lab and they're starting their testing soon. Professor Luo and his team will create a new integrated circuit in no time, so don't you dare tell me that I don't have raw material when I actually need to start mass production."

"I won't, I won't! Mr Jiang, don't worry, the Li family will not disappoint you," replied Li Zhengshang hurriedly.

This was the most important thing to handle. They must not ruin Jiang Ning's plans.

"Good." Jiang Ning got up and walked out. Li Zhengshang wanted to ask him, but didn't ask in the end.

NH

He didn't dare to ask Jiang Ning what he was going to do.

Meanwhile.

Back in the castle.

Yeshma was shocked. He didn't expect the battle in the southwest to end like this.

"Five armies joined hands and lost? And they've been annihilated?"

Yeshma had a bad feeling about this.

The Li family was from China and he was very sensitive to this country. Every time he heard about it, he felt uneasy all over.

"That's right, Commander. This Li family army is incredible. They only have 3,000 men, but they're as powerful as 10,000!" His subordinate was also in shock. "The scariest part is that they're all unafraid to die, they were brave and fearless and rather united. They're so united, it doesn't look like they're working together just for the sake of money."

The Holy Sword Mercenary Army knew how the battles in this region were fought, and so they could control the outcomes easily.

They were able to fight anybody without losing.

But they had never seen a mercenary army like the Li family's.

Yeshma remained silent.

His fingers rapped on the desk and the bad feeling in his heart intensified.

“Tell me,” his face suddenly darkened and he stared at his most trusted subordinate. His voice was extremely cold and sinister now, “Who is the one backing the Li family? Don’t tell me things like they’re not backed by the Third World! Who cares about them!”

“I want you to check if the Li family is backed by someone from China!”

The subordinate was surprised.

“They are. It’s that Lin Group.”

Lin Group? But that meant the boss’ surname was Lin, so there was no problem. That company was gaining some traction lately, but they were still a small company.

Lin Group! Lin Group!

Yeshma’s brows were deeply furrowed. The boss of Lin Group was a Lin, but that man was a Jiang. Was there a relation between a Lin and a Jiang?

It didn’t seem so.

“Commander,” his subordinate spoke again. “I’ve already checked and confirmed that this Li family is only backed by Lin Group. There are no major factions of power backing Lin Group either.”

NH

“That’s good.” Yeshma breathed a sigh of relief. As long as they had nothing to do with that man, he wasn’t afraid anymore.

But he still couldn’t get it. “Then how did the Li family army become so formidable?”

“Commander, what should we do now? Should we go ahead and destroy the Li family army ourselves?”

The five armies in the southwest had joined hands on Yeshma’s orders, but they were annihilated instead. This was a slap in Yeshma’s face!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

As the commander-in-chief of the Holy Sword Mercenary Army, Yeshma was the undisputed leader of this region. Nobody had dared to challenge him.

But now, the Li family had risen and seemed to be challenging the Holy Sword Mercenary Army.

“It’s just a tiny mercenary army and you want Holy Sword to fight?” Yeshma scoffed coldly. “You want me to lower myself and fight the Li family army? What a joke!”

The Holy Sword Mercenary Army had 50,000 men!

There was no other army like his in the Middle East. The second and third place armies had to combine themselves to match up to the Holy Sword Mercenary Army.

If he went out there to destroy the Li family army, he would look like he was bullying them.

“I was wrong! The Li family army isn’t worth the effort of Holy Sword!” responded the subordinate.

If they made an attack, it meant that they were acknowledging that the Li family army was powerful and had been noticed by the Holy Sword Mercenary Army. That was doing the Li family army a favor instead.

“But I don’t like them,” continued Yeshma before his subordinate could finish what he wanted to say.

The subordinate’s mouth was still half open but

NH

he didn't know what to say now.

This change happened too quickly.

"They've made me upset and it's affecting my sleep," said Yeshma. "I have to punish them."

"Please send orders!" his subordinate said respectfully.

He didn't want to guess what Yeshma was thinking about anymore and just waited for orders.

"Take 20,000 men and destroy half their army," said Yeshma quietly but murderously. "No need to wipe them out, just half."

This was just a warning, so it didn't look like the Holy Sword Mercenary Army was bullying them.

"Yes, sir!" the subordinate responded.

Destroying the entire Li family army with 20,000 men wasn't a problem. Destroying only half meant that they had to show some mercy, which was even harder.

The subordinate quickly left the room before Yeshma could come up with any other weird ideas.

It was best to settle this matter as quickly as possible.

It had been a long time since the Holy Sword Mercenary Army fought a battle, so they were

NH

going to rock the region with this battle!

Once all the arrangements were made, Yeshma leaned against the sofa and closed his eyes partially. He looked like he was in full control of everything.

“I don’t care who’s backing you, as long as it isn’t him. Even if it’s also someone from the Third World, I don’t care.”

US\$100 million was not a small sum and he had to get that money.

Yeshma clapped his hands to prepare his entertainment for the day.

But none of the women entered the room.

“Hmm?” He opened his eyes and looked around. “You girls have become naughty, huh? Trying to play hide and seek with me?”

He had played such games before and it was quite fun, but he didn’t like to play the same thing twice.

Yeshma got up. “I’m going to get angry...”

After just taking two steps, he froze on the spot and couldn’t get any other words out of his mouth.

His expression immediately froze as if he was unable to make any expression. He couldn’t even move his facial muscles.

NH

His puzzlement turned to surprise, then to shock, and finally to absolute terror. He almost stopped breathing!

“You’re angry?” Jiang Ning walked in confidently with his hands behind his back. He walked past Yeshma and sat down on the sofa to look at Yeshma.

Yeshma didn’t dare to move at all!

Why was it him?!

He...he was here! But why?!

“You want to attack my folks, so I think I’m even angrier.”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Jiang Ning sat on the couch like it was his own.

He picked up an empty wine glass on the table and poured himself a glass, then swirled it gently.

Yeshma was in a daze.

He slowly turned and looked at the face that had woken him up in his sleep so many times before. He didn't know what to say.

His head was filled with what Jiang Ning just said.

One was that Yeshma wanted to attack Jiang Ning's folks.

Secondly, Jiang Ning was even angrier as a result.

He was going to die at this rate!

Even though 3,000 fully armed soldiers that had been well trained by him guarded this castle, Jiang Ning could still kill him easily!

Nobody would be in time to save him.

Nobody would even be able to save him.

"Mr...Mr God of War..." Yeshma finally snapped out of his shock and took a deep breath. "Is there...is there a misunderstanding between us?"

A thin layer of sweat covered his forehead as he stood three steps away from Jiang Ning and didn't dare to go any closer.

NH

“Come here.” Jiang Ning waved his hand and Yeshma hesitated before finally walking over and sitting down next to Jiang Ning. He felt like if he took one more step forward, he would fall into hell!

How did Jiang Ning come in completely unnoticed? What were his bodyguards doing?

He had spent a lot of money to train these elite soldiers, but these elites...weren't elite at all.

“Lin Group is my wife's company,” Jiang Ning went straight to the point.

He put down his wine glass and frowned slightly. Yeshma felt his heart sink instantly.

Lin Group was Jiang Ning's wife's company?

What the hell?!

Lin Group, and not Jiang Group!

“Mr God of War...”

“The Li family army belongs to me too,” said Jiang Ning calmly. “I don't think I've offended you, right? Why are you so bent on wiping me out?”

Yeshma shuddered violently.

Wipe out Jiang Ning?

That was worse than dying!

“No, no, there must be some misunderstanding,”

NH

said Yeshma quickly. “Mr God of War, this is definitely a misunderstanding!”

“I didn’t know that the Li family army belongs to you, and I really didn’t know that the Lin Group backing them actually belongs to your wife. I’ll stop my men right now!”

He got up to make a call and Jiang Ning didn’t stop him.

“Stop! Stop everything! Do not attack the Li family army, they’re our friends!” roared Yeshma into the phone. His subordinate had already gathered the troops and was about to set off, and now he was terribly confused.

Half an hour ago, they were enemies and Yeshma wanted to teach the Li family army a lesson. In such a short span of time, they were suddenly friends now?

“I said stop! This is an order! Whoever dares to attack the Li family army is basically challenging my authority! Understand?!”

He slammed down the phone and anxious went back to sit with Jiang Ning.

He didn’t know how to talk to Jiang Ning at all. Back then, Jiang Ning killed everyone in the way, and could take on a few dozen men alone. All he could see in his mind was how Jiang Ning had massacred all these highly skilled fighters so easily.

He never imagined that a human could become

this powerful!

“Whose business is this?” asked Jiang Ning.

“Silicon Valley,” Yeshma didn’t dare to hide anything.

He didn’t want to die yet.

“They’ve offered US\$100 million to take down the Li family army’s campsite. I didn’t know this belonged to you. If I had known, never mind \$100 million...” Yeshma shook his head. “Even if they offered me \$1 billion, I wouldn’t take this job.”

There was no point in having lots of money but being dead.

He knew very well that nothing was more important than being alive!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

In this world, there were definitely no more than three people who would come all the way into this castle and kill Yeshma without anyone noticing. Jiang Ning would be the one with the easiest time.

Yeshma wasn't afraid of offending army commanders, but he really didn't want to offend a scary fighter like Jiang Ning who left no trace behind.

"Got it." Jiang Ning got up from the sofa. He wasn't here to create trouble for Yeshma in the first place. He knew that this was how to survive in this region. "You're the king in this region, so my folks might need a little shelter from you sometimes."

"Being of service to you is my honor," said Yeshma respectfully as he immediately stood up and placed a hand over his heart. "I'm willing to share a friend's burden."

Jiang Ning nodded and didn't say more. He then disappeared into the distance.

Yeshma remained standing as sweat soaked his clothes.

He fell back on the sofa with a thud and felt like all his energy had been sapped out of him.

"He seems to have become even stronger."

He was very sure of it. The pressurizing aura that Jiang Ning unleashed was very faint, but it was aimed at his heart.

NH

It felt so difficult to even breathe.

He knew that if he had made the wrong decision earlier, he wouldn't be sitting on the sofa now. His dead and cold body would be lying on the floor instead.

"I never thought he would come back here and even start a business." Yeshma took downed several mouthfuls of wine. "Those assholes in Silicon Valley! Don't they know who he is?!"

They had nearly gotten him killed.

These assholes!

"I'm taking that US\$100 million as compensation for my emotional trauma!" Yeshma pulled his phone out and dialed a number. The other side picked up quickly since he was waiting for news from Yeshma.

"You guys tried to kill me? I'm going to remember this well." He slammed down the phone after that and didn't let the other party explain themselves nor explain anything to them.

Those who knew who Jiang Ning really was were very careful about it and would not tell others about it.

Now that Jiang Ning was part of this scene, everything was different.

In terms of strength and ability, the Li family army was nowhere near Yeshma's army at all.

NH

But the Li family army was backed by Jiang Ning!

As long as he was around, there was no way he could touch the Li family army.

“Thank goodness, thank goodness.” Yeshma wasn’t stupid. Since Jiang Ning came to look for him and even asked him to take care of the Li family army, it meant that Jiang Ning didn’t intend to kill him and even sought his cooperation.

This was a rare chance!

“Men!” Yeshma yelled out after a while.

His subordinate ran in very quickly. They hadn’t heard anything when Jiang Ning came earlier, but now they reacted normally.

“Commander.”

“Prepare some presents,” said Yeshma. “The Li family army has just been established, so as a senior in this field, I should send them my blessings.”

“Yes, sir.” The subordinate was surprised but didn’t dare to ask further.

Yeshma had told him to prepare the troops to destroy half the Li family army as a warning to them just moments ago.

And now, he had to prepare presents?

The commander was becoming weirder and weirder. He wondered if he was down with some

incurable disease.

“Wait a minute,” Yeshma called him back again. “Make sure those presents are expensive. Also, prepare some ammunition, medicine and other resources for the Li family army.”

“I’ll visit them personally tomorrow.”

The subordinate was completely stunned now. Yeshma was going to visit them personally? What was going on now?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Yeshma wasn't only paying the Li family a visit personally, but was going to give them so many things too.

Was this a joke?

How could an army like the Li family's make Yeshma make this decision?

"Why are you still standing there?" Yeshma saw that his subordinate was still standing in a daze and scoffed. "Don't waste time, see to it now!"

"Yes, sir!"

This was a good chance to become friends with Jiang Ning, so Yeshma didn't want to miss this chance.

Even if he couldn't become real friends with Jiang Ning, he just wanted to make sure they weren't enemies. If he could make Jiang Ning owe him even a small favor, that would be equivalent to gaining a talisman!

He wasn't going to reject the good luck that was coming his way.

Since he had received this US\$100 million, Yeshma wasn't going to return it. It was already kind of him to just accept it was compensation for his emotional trauma.

But the men on the other side of the line didn't look too good.

All of them looked at the man who led this group

NH

and was sitting right in the middle.

“What does Yeshma mean by that? He’s taken the money and refuses to do the work? Even if he’s got a powerful backer, he’s going against the rules.”

“He’s taken \$100 million and has done nothing!”

“Does he think that our money is that easy to earn?”

All of them scoffed coldly and thought that Yeshma was too complacent. He must have thought that he could do whatever he wanted just because he had the backing of someone in the Third World.

But since he had broken the rules, then things weren’t going to end like that.

“He’s failed.” The man in the middle lightly rapped his fingers on the desk and spoke up after a brief period of silence. “He’s taken our money but didn’t do the job. That won’t do.”

“Mr Jimmy, Lin Group’s R&D lab has already started work and it’s only a matter of time before those professors get an IC out. Now they’ve found a good mine as well, I don’t think that’s good news to us,” said one of them. “I’m not worried that they might threaten our position, but I feel like we’ve been offended.”

Nobody else said anything. They all knew that it wasn’t just about being offended. The real problem was that they had truly felt threatened.

NH

Those few scientists from China were definitely some of the best in the world.

The top three integrated circuits within Silicon Valley were designed by them too. These men's brains were extremely valuable!

These scientists thought that they couldn't return to China because their country couldn't provide them with the right environment to do research, and they would have to use a lot of connections to get started.

They had checked all these things before.

Your skills and ability weren't the most important thing when it came to doing research in China. It was more important to butter up to the right people, get the right connections and make the right people happy.

This was an insult to these talents, and it was as good as killing their talent.

That was how these major tech companies overseas had managed to get their hands on these scientists. But this Lin Group seemed to work differently.

And that made them feel threatened!

They refused to let anybody threaten their position, no matter how much it cost.

"This Lin Group is not simple at all." Jimmy rapped his fingers on the desk slowly and his voice sounded calm and unfeeling. "Yeshma isn't

NH

stupid. He must have dared to do this for a good reason.”


“But he can’t possibly take our money and not do anything.” Jimmy smiled.

He looked up at the rest.

“Why did the Haysons let their experts go?”

Nobody answered him.

“And now Yeshma isn’t taking action against Lin Group. Can’t you tell what’s going on?”

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Everyone frowned. They could see that Lin Group wasn't ordinary, and there was probably a lot more they didn't know about.

Taking action rashly would be very dangerous.

"The Haysons aren't that formidable, but they're still a power from the Third World who has a strong foothold in Silicon Valley. Lin Group took away their staff and they didn't say anything. That's a big problem in itself."

"And now, Yeshma's behavior has confirmed my suspicions. This Lin Group is probably also backed by someone in the Third World."

Jimmy smiled faintly.

He looked as though he had seen through everything.

"So what should we do?"

Jimmy turned to look at the person who spoke.

"I'll handle this. You guys think of a way to deal with the Lee family. It's time we taught him a lesson."

The Lee family had become Lin Group's ally, so if they wanted to deal with Lin Group, they could start with Lee Group first. He wasn't in a hurry to attack Lin Group.

Since this implicated other powers from the Third World, things weren't going to be that simple.

NH

The office was only left with Jimmy.

After some time, he finally heard the sound of the door opening.

“You said you wanted to work with me, but I have to see if you’re really sincere about it.”

“Our family’s position in the Third World is considered upper middle, but we can’t always stay there.”

Jimmy looked at the man who had come into the room and a crazed ambitious look took over his face.

The few families within Silicon Valley were all either ranked in the middle or upper middle within the Third World, so they were quite far off from the ones right on top.

But nobody would give up the chance to rise higher.

“You want to rise higher? Do you know how hard it is to do that?”

“It was probably very difficult in the past, but I think it won’t be as difficult with you around,” smiled Jimmy. “Mr Fang Yin, I know what you’re capable of. You mysterious fighters from the east are all terrifyingly powerful, so if you’re willing to help me, then I’m sure we’re got a good chance.”

“As long as you help me to become one of the top families in the Third World, then I will promise to find anything that you want me to!”

NH

He smiled brightly and gave off a wily old fox's aura.

Everyone was smart enough to know that talk was cheap.

Working together just meant that they would take only what they wanted and achieve what they wanted.

"What do you want me to do?" Fang Yin stared at Jimmy. He didn't like talking to these businessmen because they were too cunning.

Fang Yin guessed that the last two pages were in the hands of these major Third World powers.

He had already searched the world but there were no clues, so where else would it be?

Since it was so valuable, some people would definitely hide it away well. He had to go through someone who was part of the Third World to hunt these pages down.

"Create chaos," replied Jimmy. "I want you to kill Yeshma!"

"And you must follow my method and timing."

Fang Yin narrowed his eyes and his expression darkened.

He didn't work for this man and was definitely not willing to listen to this man's arrangement!

"Mr Fang Yin, trust me, I won't let you down.

NH

Cooperating with me is the fastest way to getting what you want,” said Jimmy directly as if he could see what Fang Yin was thinking about and didn’t give Fang Yin the chance to refuse.

When it came to judging others’ behavior and character, Jimmy was a shrewd one after being in business for so long. He wasn’t fearful or weaker even though he was faced with a highly skilled fighter like Fang Yin.

After all, people like Fang Yin were just tools, and it was just whether they were worth a lot or worth a little.

Clearly, Fang Yin was worth quite a bit. Even though they were making use of one another, Jimmy was going to make sure he got more out of this partnership!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Businessmen were all like that, especially someone who was from the Third World like Jimmy.

They were the best among businessmen.

There was no business they ever rejected. It was just a matter of whether the benefit was sufficient or not, and whether it was worth their effort or not.

Jimmy looked at Fang Yin very calmly and didn't seem afraid or reverent towards him at all. The calmness he exuded made him seem like he was highly skilled too.

But the only power he had was money.

Fang Yin didn't say anything. He wasn't interested in money at all.

If he was, he could have gathered a group of people to create a business empire by now.

But that wasn't what he wanted.

He just wanted the boxing manual and to find the place that the map behind the manual pointed to. He wasn't interested in the rest at all.

"Mr Fang Yin, this is a partnership, so we're just going to take what we want from it," said Jimmy. "You can get what you want and I can get what I want. We could even become friends, so this is quite a good deal for us."

"You can trust me. Besides, I'm sure you know

NH

that I wouldn't possibly dare to lie to you."

Jimmy smiled and his voice had a fake sort of politeness about it.

But they both knew what each other was really thinking about.

The higher one's position was, the more sly one was, and the better one knew how to hide their true emotions.

Fang Yin wasn't stupid either.

If it was a partnership, then it was a partnership.

If it was a transaction, then it was going to be nothing but that.

Before getting what he wanted or achieving his aim, Fang Yin wasn't going to reveal his emotions either.

Otherwise, the way Jimmy talked earlier was enough to send him to his death!

"Fine." Fang Yin's voice as low and he didn't beat around the bush. "Find the thing I want now!"

"Sure." Jimmy nodded.

Jimmy watched Fang Yin leave and continued to twiddle with the ring on his thumb.

This ring was very valuable and was bought at an auction. It didn't sell for a high price because very few people could see what was so special about

NH

this thumb ring.

“Are they all looking for that place? Grandpa was right after all. That map behind the manual is not simple at all.” Jimmy narrowed his eyes and sighed quietly as he looked at the ring on his thumb. “Does it come from the same place as this?”

He wasn't surprised when Fang Yin came looking for him.

Jimmy had always been rather interested in highly skilled fighters from the east like Fang Yin, but he was also wary.

He knew that someone would find their way to the Third World eventually, because he knew that someone out there would definitely be interested in that ancient manual.

A gleam slowly lit up his eyes and a tinge of greed slowly appeared.

In the past, he would never have dreamt of rising within the Third World powers to stand right at the top.

But now, he wanted more than all this...

“We'll just make use of one another,” said Jimmy with a cold smile.

.....

Meanwhile.

NH

In the Middle East.

The fighting spirit and unity of the Li family army was incredible and shocking.

They had fought several battles in a row and their morale was at its highest now.

The construction work never stopped and building after building went up. It wouldn't be long before all the basic buildings were completed.

At the same time, the ten commanders had chosen their best soldiers from each troop and handed them to Brother Gou for training.

They thought that all their men would be able to make it to the end, but after just one day, half of them were eliminated!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Troop Six's commander was about to die from exhaustion.

He had joined the training personally, but he nearly died from dehydration after going through the obstacles and he was still lying on the bed and hooked up to oxygen.

"That's all you guys are made of?"

The wolves were also covered with sweat, but their breathing was very stable. They were completely different from the soldiers who looked like they were about to puke their lungs out.

"Didn't you guys seem so confident that you can last the training?"

"You want to become special troop soldiers like this? Dream on!"

"3,000 push-ups! Those who can't do it can get lost now!"

"Who said you could rest? Would an enemy let you rest? Stand up! Keep running!"

"If you can't do it, then forget it! At most you'd just get laughed at! So if your skin is thick enough, you'll be fine!"

All the mercenary soldiers felt like they were about to vomit blood soon.

Their bodies had to suffer so much torture from the training and were already on the brink of breaking down physically and mentally, and on

NH

top of that, they had to endure the taunting of the wolves.

That was even harder to bear than the pain in their bodies!

“Men cannot say that they can’t do it! Can you do it?”

Number Five squatted down and looked at Badis working hard on his push-ups.

“Yes!” roared Badis. His entire body was tense and every inch of him was trembling violently.

“Can you do it or not?!” Number Five roared at him again.

“YES!” Badis had a resolute look in his eyes and used all his energy to make sure he didn’t shout any softer than Number Five did.

He had seen how formidable these wolves were.

They were no match for the wolves at all.

These wolves were real grim reapers and real warriors, while he...was way off from them!

Since he had the chance to learn from them and become stronger like what Jiang Ning said, he wasn’t going to miss this chance.

He was going to persevere on even though this training was wearing his willpower down!

“Out of the 300 who initially came here, there are

NH

barely 60 left.” Brother Gou took a glance at them and had no expression on his face. “They’ll do.”

If Jiang Ning were here, he would probably have kicked him into the mud. Back when Jiang Ning was training them like mad, Brother Gou screamed and shrieked even more loudly than these guys.

“Brother Gou, I’ll have to trouble you,” Li Genhong nodded. “We need a special team of soldiers to specialize in completing certain missions. This is very important.”

“Don’t worry, we’re very experienced in training others.” Brother Gou grinned. “But of course, training them physically isn’t enough. There are many things that they need to learn, like culture and other sorts of knowledge.”

“Knowledge is power!”

Li Genhong froze. He was a little stunned by Brother Gou’s words.

“Brother Gou, you’re saying...?”

“You want to groom all rounded talents, and not just simple minded and physically fit people. I’m sure you get it.”

Brother Gou was now studying very hard under the guidance of the Legend of Shengcheng. His current way of thinking and exposure was very different compared to him in the past, and the more he studied, the more he realized he was lacking in many areas.

NH

Li Genhong nodded. "I get it. I'll arrange this part."

"Young Master Li!" Just as he was about to speak, someone came running in with a grim expression and seemed rather anxious.

"There are mercenary soldiers coming our way, and their flag belongs to the Holy Sword Mercenary Army!"

Li Genhong's expression paled.

They were here?

The Holy Sword Mercenary Army was here?

They were the kings in this region and lorded it over here. They were way stronger than the Li family army too. Did they come to destroy the Li family army?

"How many are here?" asked Li Genhong anxiously. He clenched his fists and got ready for battle!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

“Not many. Our informant says around a hundred men,” replied Li Genhong’s subordinate.

Even if the number of men who had come were few, those were Holy Sword Mercenary Army’s soldiers!

Rumor had it that their commander, Yeshma, was a demon who killed without batting an eyelid!

“Just slightly over a hundred?” Li Genhong was a little stunned.

But with just a little over a hundred men, they didn’t seem to be here to start a war. With so few people, they would be killed before even reaching the camp.

Furthermore, Jiang Ning and the wolves were all still here.

Even if a thousand men came, he wasn’t scared.

But since they were so few in number and weren’t here to make trouble, Li Genhong had to be polite to them. At the same time, he had to remain vigilant.

“Prepare to receive our guests,” said Li Genhong. “Also, get four troops to prepare for battle.”

“I’ll go outside and receive them myself.”

“Yes, sir!”

Orders went out and everyone got into position.

NH

The Li family army was extremely efficient now, so Li Genhong's orders went down quickly.

Li Genhong walked to the entrance to the camp and the two rows of mercenary soldiers stood straight. They wanted to show the powerful presence of the Li family army, as well as their great confidence!

BEEP BEEP!

The oncoming jeeps sounded their horns and parked in a row outside without entering the campsite.

That was a show of respect to the Li family army.

The car door opened and Yeshma got out. A group of bodyguards protected him on all sides.

"Commander Yeshma!" Li Genhong smiled and spoke politely, "What brings you here today?"

"I've heard all about how you have an extraordinary presence, and today I'm seeing it for myself."

"Young Master Li, you're too kind," Yeshma nodded. He was pleased that Li Genhong had taken the initiative to greet him since he was the younger person after all.

He turned and noticed that the soldiers standing on both sides were not in formation for a fight, but to welcome him. Li Genhong was a very detailed man. He knew that Yeshma wasn't here for a fight, so he made arrangements accordingly.

NH

“I heard that the Li family army has recently won several battles and yours is the only army left in the southwestern region, right?”

Yeshma didn't mention that the five army coalition was his idea.

“This is all thanks to Commander Yeshma. Since you gave us such a wonderful opportunity, then I can't let you down,” said Li Genhong politely with a smile.

These words immediately turned something that should have been a point of conflict into a favor.

Yeshma enjoyed hearing these words and Li Genhong said them easily.

“Commander, this way please!” Li Genhong stretched his arm out to show Yeshma in.

Yeshma nodded and walked in with Li Genhong just a step behind him. He was very good at showing respect to others.

The welcome team immediately started playing music and showered ribbons to make the atmosphere lively.

Most others would have been super nervous and antsy if a big shot like Yeshma came to visit. They would have remained fearful even if their guest wasn't here to create any trouble.

It was rare to find someone so young but calm and composed like Li Genhong.

NH

Yeshma realized that the Li family army had risen so quickly not only because Jiang Ning backed them, but also because this Li Genhong was capable.

If he wasn't capable, Jiang Ning wouldn't have picked him either.

Li Genhong was very polite and showed Yeshma into the main hall.

"In this region, Commander Yeshma's name is a legend, and I heard about you from my first day here. I'm so honored to be able to actually see you in person!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Li Genhong got someone to serve the tea.
“Commander, here’s some tea from our hometown, please try some.”

Yeshma picked up the teacup and took a sip. He didn’t seem worried that there was anything poisonous in this tea.

Jiang Ning’s subordinates did not need to stoop to such despicable means.

And they definitely did not do such things.

“The younger ones are really rising up,” said Yeshma. “If you belonged to the same generation as myself, then I don’t think I would have stood a chance.”

“Oh no, how could you say that,” Li Genhong quickly shook his head. This was a difficult conversation to continue and most people would have become terribly nervous by now, because it was hard to tell what Yeshma meant by these words. “I’ve always treated you as my target, and I’ve made it so far because I’ve learnt from you.”

“And the more I’ve learnt, the more I’ve realized there are so many areas I need to learn. I just hope that when I turn forty, I’d be able to catch a glimpse of your success. That’s enough to make me feel proud.”

“HAHAHA!” Yeshma burst out laughing.

Li Genhong was very good with words and everything he said sounded so pleasant. Even though these were just polite words, they still

made Yeshma feel good.

“Young fellow, I like you very much!”

Li Genhong smiled and didn't reply him. He picked up his teacup and toasted Yeshma, then both of them drank the tea down.

“I've come here to take a look,” said Yeshma. “I wanted to see how formidable this legendary Li family army is, and I wanted to see who this great Young Master Li is as well.”

“In this war torn region, there's always someone who rises and someone who falls. Disappearing into thin air is very normal. One wrong decision could very well kill you instantly.”

“I will remember what you have taught me,” said Li Genhong.

Yeshma nodded. “Many people have been wondering why I'm here, and I don't think you know why either.”

Li Genhong didn't say anything.

It was true that he had no idea.

He didn't think it was a good thing for Yeshma to have an eye on him. He had been worried about this up until the night before. But when he thought about how Jiang Ning was still sitting in the backyard, he stopped panicking.

Jiang Ning had gone to say hello to Yeshma, and Li Genhong didn't expect this gesture to turn out

so well.

Neither of them talked about Jiang Ning and just behaved like old friends who hadn't met in a long time. They chatted casually and sounded like a senior giving a junior some pointers and tips.

If others were here, they might not have believed that Yeshma could be so even tempered.

"In order to congratulate the Li family army on its formation, I've brought you some gifts."

Yeshma clapped his hands and someone brought a list of items in.

There were weapons, ammunition...

And there was even an armored vehicle!

This was very expensive.

Li Genhong quietly took a deep breath and Yeshma noticed it. That was the first reaction he had seen from Li Genhong that resembled a reaction of someone his age.

"Commander Yeshma, this..."

This gift was too valuable.

Li Genhong didn't dare to accept a gift that landed in his hands for no reason.

There was no free lunch in this war torn region at all.

NH

Every item had an invisible price tag on it. If you wanted it, you had to pay the price!

Those were the rules and nobody could break those rules!

“This is the price I’m paying in order to survive,” whispered Yeshma calmly.

These words made Li Genhong’s heart pound wildly.

In order to survive?

Did Yeshma just say that this was the price he was paying in exchange for his own life? Was he kidding?

Was the great commander of the top mercenary in the Middle East, Yeshma, here to pay him protection fees?!

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

No matter how mentally strong Li Genhong was, he was really puzzled now.

Yeshma had come to pay him protection fees...

This man was the commander-in-chief of the top mercenary army in this region and was so powerful that he struck fear in everyone's hearts. But he was here to pay protection fees?

It was because...because of Jiang Ning!

Yeshma's bodyguards were all top notch fighters, so very few people could possibly be a threat to his safety.

He often stayed in the camp and seldom came out. It was incredibly difficult to break into that castle of his!

Was Jiang Ning that terrifying?

Jiang Ning just went to say hello and Yeshma came running to Li Genhong to pay protection fees.

Li Genhong gulped. He knew that Jiang Ning was very powerful, and he had tried guessing how powerful Jiang Ning was before. But he never thought that Jiang Ning would be this powerful.

He didn't know how to respond.

All of these things were Yeshma's attempt to gain Jiang Ning's favor in order to stay alive.

"From today onwards, we're all friends. So if you

NH

need anything, just say the word,” Yeshma spoke up first before Li Genhong said anything. “In a war, your own benefits always come first, and I’m sure you know that. It’s definitely better to have an additional friend than an additional enemy, don’t you think so?”

“Of course, of course,” replied Li Genhong. “Thank you for your guidance.”

He picked up his teacup to toast Yeshma in place of wine.

Once the tea went down his stomach, Yeshma made a slight face. He still wasn’t used to the taste of tea and felt that it wasn’t as satisfying as alcohol.

“Alright now, I just came to have a look, so I won’t stay for too long.” He got up. “I still have other matters to settle, I’ll take my leave first.”

Yeshma stood up and all his bodyguards immediately surrounded him again.

“I’ll see you out!” Li Genhong went out as well.

Yeshma hadn’t spent a long time out here.

When it came to someone in his position, remaining in his castle was the safest. But at the same time, he cherished his life now, so he wouldn’t have wanted to leave the castle if he wasn’t trying to prove his sincerity.

Staying in the castle was safe and comfortable, so he didn’t need take a risk by coming out.

NH

Then again, Yeshma didn't think anyone in this place would dare to do anything to him.

Being cautious went a long way.

"Commander Yeshma, have a good day!" Li Genhong and his men saw Yeshma out and only breathed a sigh of relief when their cars left.

He knew that Yeshma was here because of Jiang Ning, but the rest didn't. The other ten commanders were all on standby and were nervous for a long time. They were all ready to go to war already.

"Young Master Li, why did Commander Yeshma suddenly visit and give us so many things? What is he trying to do?" Troop Five's commander couldn't understand, and neither could the rest.

They had been in this region long enough to know what Yeshma's name meant.

His presence always meant destruction!

But it seemed like Yeshma had put himself in a lower position today, and seemed to be rather afraid as well. He had stepped into the camp very cautiously, as if he was afraid of making too much noise and disturbing others.

They had never seen Yeshma behave like this, and they couldn't believe that this man was the king of this war torn region.

"What he wants to do doesn't matter. What we do is more important," said Li Genhong. "I don't think

NH

this bodes well, so no matter what, we must become stronger. He can be nice today, but he might suddenly bring his army over to destroy us tomorrow!”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

The commanders were still a little gleeful earlier, but Li Genhong's words were like a tub of cold water poured down on them and they sobered up again.

"Yes, sir! We got it!"

"You guys had better quickly make full use of the time to train yourselves up. I have a feeling that things are going to change."

Li Genhong wasn't worried about Yeshma. He just felt that it was dangerous for so many people to have known about Yeshma's visit to the Li family camp. This sent a different signal to different people.

The Li family had risen too quickly, so it was only natural for them to become a new target.

If Jiang Ning weren't around, Yeshma would have brought his men to destroy the Li family by now. But what about everyone else?

There was more than one powerful person in this region, and Yeshma might not hold this position forever.

All of them were representatives of the Third World, and they were just tools for the Third World to gain more benefits. So it was just a matter of who was more useful for gaining more benefits for the ones backing them.

"Increase our defenses and make sure there are no loopholes!" Li Genhong sent out orders.

“Yes, sir!”

He returned to the main hall and looked at the tea cups on the table as he frowned.

Things had gone more smoothly than he had imagined. While Jiang Ning was one of the reasons, he was sure there were other reasons.

The more smoothly things went, the more worried Li Genhong became. A bad feeling crept over his heart and refused to go away. After all, this was a place where things never went smoothly.

“I’ll go ask Mr Jiang.”

Li Genhong got up and walked quickly to where Jiang Ning was.

Jiang Ning was now leaning against a chair and had just finished a video call with Lin Yuzhen to find out how the R&D lab was doing.

They were making good progress, since they had plenty of funding and Luo Lin’s team was very experienced.

Their first model went well, so it would probably only take another two months for their new design to come out.

It would probably still take a bit of time to reach the production stage, but they were still going way faster than anyone had ever been able to.

The most urgent thing now was to stabilize the area around the mine, then start working on the

NH

mines to ship the raw material out.

The raw material was the most important part of this whole thing.

On top of that, this entire project was to help Lin Group enter the Third World and gain a strong foothold there!

DOONG DOONG DOONG!

Li Genhong knocked on the door. “Mr Jiang, I’m coming in.”

He pushed the door open and nodded politely. “Mr Jiang, Commander Yeshma came by earlier and gave us a lot of resources. He said that this is the price he’s paying in order to survive.”

Li Genhong didn’t hide anything and recounted their conversation in full to Jiang Ning.

“You think there’s a problem?”

“There should be no problem with Commander Yeshma,” said Li Genhong. “But I feel that this matter itself will become a problem. I have a bad feeling about it.”

Jiang Ning fell silent for a moment.

“Yeshma is an idiot,” he suddenly spoke up and shook his head. “He’s too used to a life of stability and has become complacent. He’s forgotten how many people are watching him secretly.”

Li Genhong’s heart sank.

“Mr Jiang, you mean...”

“This stupid fellow has revealed a fatal flaw,” snorted Jiang Ning. “Someone is going to use this chance to attack him. This stupid fellow.”

He had called Yeshma stupid so many times because Yeshma was really dumb for exposing so many flaws. Those scheming ones wouldn't let this opportunity slip by.

“Get ready, a storm is coming!”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Li Genhong's heart shuddered.

He was still stunned. A storm was coming?

"Mr Jiang, what should I do?"

Li Genhong didn't know what to do when something like that suddenly happened.

He didn't even know what storm was coming. Yeshma had just come for a short visit and it was going to cause a storm?

Jiang Ning glanced at Li Genhong.

This boy was quite smart and rather gifted, but he was still inexperienced and hadn't seen much.

Things changed in an instant in this battlefield!

Those powerful mercenary armies were all backed by Third World powers, and these financial backers poured a lot of money and resources into these armies. They weren't doing all this for nothing.

They were doing this for more benefits!

"You guys drank tea, right?" asked Jiang Ning.

That was the way they showed hospitality to guests.

"Yes. Commander Yeshma didn't like it too much," nodded Li Genhong.

Yeshma had taken the tea out of courtesy. He

NH

didn't like tea and had to stop himself from frowning.

"That's a chance for others to create trouble."

Jiang Ning thought about it carefully.

This was the only part of the process that could be manipulated. If Jiang Ning did this, he could make a huge story out of this.

Li Genhong stared at Jiang Ning and gulped.

"So I..."

"From now on, you've been poisoned," said Jiang Ning simply.

"Poisoned?" Li Genhong's eyes widened.

Why was he suddenly poisoned now?

"You've not only been poisoned, but your life is in danger and you're in an emergency situation. You might die anytime and you're very weak," said Jiang Ning calmly as he looked at Li Genhong. "Send this story out while you stay here with me. Do not go anywhere nor see anybody until this matter is settled."

Li Genhong was still lost but he was willing to listen to anything Jiang Ning said.

Li Zhengshang came over in no time.

He listened to Jiang Ning's arrangement, then turned to Li Genhong and said, "Listen to Mr

NH

Jiang!”

Then he ran out.

The news spread like wildfire. Li Genhong had been poisoned!

The Li family army immediately became anxious. Nobody expected Li Genhong to have been poisoned.

“Let me go in to see him!” Several commanders ran over from the training facilities and looked terribly anxious, but the wolves stood outside the door and didn't let anyone in.

“He's being treated right now, so if you go in now, you might end up killing him!” Brother Gou glared at them. “All of you have to wait!”

“Wait?! Who will lead us if Young Master Li dies?”

“Young Master Li must not die! This homeland needs him!”

“Which asshole did this?! How dare someone poison him?! I'm going to kill him!”

“You must get him the best doctor!”

They knew that Li Zhengshang had already gotten a doctor to save Li Genhong, but there was no update on the situation and everyone was very worried.

“Just do what you're supposed to be doing!” Brother Gou saw them pace the area repeatedly

NH

and said impatiently, "Use your brains! Since someone wanted to kill him, it means someone wants to kill all of you!"

"So all of you must guard this camp well! Don't let anyone hide in the darkness and get the chance to kill the rest of you!"

All the commanders seemed to have suddenly woken up at these words. They looked at each other and understood what Brother Gou was saying.

Since someone wanted to kill Li Genhong, it meant that other troubles would arise.

"Got it!" The commanders nodded and went back to increase the security levels around the camp.

Brother Gou stood at the door and wrinkled his nose.

"How are these fellows dumber than me?"

Li Genhong was sitting inside the room and heard how everyone outside was worried and anxious about him, but he couldn't go out and explain things to them.

"Are you saying that something will happen to Commander Yeshma?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Li Genhong was a little disappointed.

Yeshma's visit was a good sign. With the support of the Holy Sword Mercenary Army, the Li family army would definitely grow and expand.

But if Yeshma died, then all these wouldn't happen anymore.

"In this battlefield, don't ever think about relying on others, because you don't know when they might suddenly collapse, so you can only rely on yourself," said Jiang Ning calmly.

"If nothing else goes wrong, Yeshma is definitely going to die!"

Meanwhile.

Yeshma was on his way back to his castle.

The road back was smooth and nothing happened.

"I really don't understand why they like that stuff. It's so bitter and it's not as tasty as alcohol." Yeshma spat a few times but still felt like there was a strange taste in his throat.

He never liked the taste of tea.

The car drove to the entrance of the castle and according to the rules, the car had to be stopped and checked, even if it was Yeshma's own car.

That was how strict he was.

NH

“Everyone out of the car, we need to inspect you!”

A few armored soldiers came forward to check every single person in the car, even their own commander-in-chief.

Someone had impersonated Yeshma and tricked the guards before, and he had entered the castle to attempt an assassination on the real Yeshma.

From then on, Yeshma declared that everyone had to be checked before entering the castle, even himself.

He was always very careful and did his best to ensure his own safety.

He had always been confident in his own cautiousness.

The soldiers patted Yeshma down from top to bottom and didn't find anything unusual.

“All clear!”

“All clear!”

Everyone passed the check with no problems.

Yeshma got back into the car and leaned back with a smug look on his face.

Who could possibly kill him under such secure circumstances?

It was impossible to even get into the castle, never come near him. Only super highly skilled

NH

fighters like Jiang Ning were able to enter without making a single sound.

“Let’s go back,” said Yeshma.

He leaned back and slowly closed his eyes. He felt a strange tiredness overcome him and his eyelids were very heavy.

The car drove into the castle and headed for Yeshma’s living quarters.

In less than ten minutes, they arrived at their destination.

When the car stopped, a few bodyguards alighted to check the area first, even though this was where Yeshma lived.

“Commander, we’re here,” called out one of the bodyguards.

Yeshma didn’t respond.

“Commander? Wake up, we’re back,” called out the bodyguard again.

Yeshma still didn’t respond, so the bodyguard’s face instantly paled.

He went back into the car and pushed Yeshma, and Yeshma’s body fell to the side immediately.

Two black channels of blood flowed out from his nostrils!

“The commander is dead!” shouted the

bodyguard in fright.

Yeshma was dead?!

How did this happen?

The bodyguards had remained by his side and nothing had happened at all.

Everyone was stunned by this. Yeshma was dead!

He was already dead, so there was no point in calling for a doctor.

“Commander Yeshma died by poisoning!”

The news spread like wildfire, and it felt like an earthquake went through the Middle East.

They had just heard that Yeshma went to visit the Li family, and now he had died from poisoning?

At the same time, they had heard earlier news that Li Genhong, the head of the Li family, had also been poisoned. He had been poisoned even earlier than Yeshma, and he was still fighting for his life!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

The entire region was thrown into chaos immediately!

There were some who thought that Li Genhong was the one who poisoned Yeshma, since the only information was that Yeshma drank tea at the Li family's.

If there was a chance to poison Yeshma, then this was the only chance.

But now, Li Genhong had also been poisoned?

And news of his poisoning had spread earlier than Yeshma's.

What was going on?

"Are you sure Li Genhong got poisoned first?"

"Yes! Li Genhong is still in emergency treatment, while Yeshma just reached his castle. It's a difference of about an hour."

"Who did this?! What a vicious person! He not only tried to get rid of someone who's been rising recently, but he also got rid of the head of a veteran army like Yeshma!"

"I don't care who did it. Yeshma is dead, so that castle doesn't belong to anybody now."

There were all sorts of opinions flying around.

Many mercenary armies took this chance to take action.

NH

The best situation in a warzone was chaos.

Chaos gave them a chance for a change, and a chance for them to climb higher.

Every time things became chaotic, someone would take the chance to kill off their opponents, get more resources and rise by another level. Of course, there were also people who just completely withdrew and disappeared from the warzone in such situations.

This time, because the one who died was Yeshma, nobody cared about what happened to the Li family army anymore.

Compared to the Holy Sword Mercenary Army, the Li family army was nothing.

If the Li family army was behind this, then the next few mercenary armies that were ranked behind Holy Sword Mercenary Army could use this as an excuse to attack the Li family army and ignite a big battle.

But Li Genhong turned out to be a victim as well.

It was not right for them to attack a victim.

So the only thing they could do now was to pretend to fight in the name of justice and avenging Yeshma while trying to figure out who was the one behind this.

The smell of war filled the air as all the mercenary armies all stood ready to fight.

The Li family army campsite was no different.

All the construction work had stopped and all the soldiers were now concentrating on protecting their home.

Li Genhong was still undergoing emergency treatment.

In Jiang Ning's room.

"Checkmate," called out Li Genhong.

He looked up at Jiang Ning and saw Jiang Ning frown, so he immediately picked up the chess piece that he had placed on the board. "Ok, I won't checkmate you, I'll take back this move."

Jiang Ning wasn't too bad at playing Chinese chess, but Li Genhong was even better at it and had won several games already. Li Zhengshang watched them from the side and he was about to faint.

Why was his son so stupid?!

"It's alright, go ahead," Jiang Ning shook his head. "You can win another round."

Li Genhong glanced at Li Zhengshang and Li Zhengshang nearly shouted at him. His son could win anyone at chess but Jiang Ning! He hadn't trained his son in chess since he was a child so he could do this!

"Checkmate then." Li Genhong put the piece back on the board.

Jiang Ning had no more moves left, so he'd lost again.

"I've lost." Jiang Ning didn't beat around the bush.

"Mr Jiang, you've been too kind," said Li Genhong.

He had no idea why Jiang Ning suddenly wanted to play chess with him. And he had chosen to play Chinese chess, which was something that Li Genhong had been excellent at since he was a child.

The situation outside was so tense and all the mercenary armies were ready to take this chance to go to war with one another.

If Jiang Ning hadn't reacted in time and gotten him to pretend that he was poisoned first, all these armies would definitely charge towards the Li family army first!

"Do you understand now?" asked Jiang Ning as he pointed to the chess board.

"Yes," nodded Li Genhong.

"How much do you understand?"

"Most of it."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Li Zhengshang felt like he was watching a mime or something. Jiang Ning and Li Genhong were speaking in a language he understood, but he didn't understand what was going on at all.

The two of them had gone through a few games of chess and Jiang Ning lost all the way, so Li Zhengshang was afraid that Jiang Ning might be unhappy about that.

But Jiang Ning didn't have any expression at all and didn't seem bothered.

"Yeshma died at a bad time, but it's a good time as well."

"He was like a candle, burning himself in order to light the way for others."

"He lived a noble life and died a quiet death."

Jiang Ning sighed. This wasn't his original plan, but Yeshma was stupid and made a big mistake, so he had to change all his plans.

Thankfully, the situation wasn't too bad.

"The Li family army doesn't have to become number one in this area, but they have to be able to hold their ground and maintain their position in this place. This current situation is a good chance to do that."

Li Genhong could see that Jiang Ning had been guiding him through these few games of chess.

It was necessary to win a war, but there were

NH

different ways of winning it and it meant different things.

There were those who were powerful like Yeshma. He won many victories and became a legend.

But when someone wanted him to die, he had to die anyway and couldn't escape it at all. He was in such a high position, so there were plenty of people with their eyes on him.

The Li family army couldn't go down this road. On the contrary, they had to remain low key.

"In just two more days, you can make a move. Two days is enough for you to regain consciousness after emergency treatment."

"Got it." Li Genhong nodded.

He understood what Jiang Ning meant and knew what he had to do next.

A hero often came out of a chaotic situation, but nobody wanted to be a hero in this sort of place.

The messier the place was, the more everyone would cling onto the concept of building their homeland.

While everywhere else was filled with gunfire and everyone was in danger of dying, the Li family army campsite would remain at peace and become a shelter. What sort of sensation would this create?

NH

This would make more people believe in this concept!

This would make those within this campsite cherish it even more and protect it with their lives.

That was the sort of emotions that Li Genhong wanted to stir up.

Meanwhile.

Back in Silicon Valley.

Jimmy had already received the news.

He had to admit that Fang Yin was really formidable, especially in the use of poison.

He had just disguised himself as a guard outside, and the few seconds he had with Yeshma was enough to make Yeshma die so quietly.

CLAP CLAP!

Jimmy applauded and his expression was filled with admiration. "Mr Fang Yin, your abilities are really amazing."

"Yeshma is dead, so all the Third World powers have their eye on the Middle East and are waiting to reap a harvest. Once they take action, we'll get a chance."

Fang Yin sat across him with no expression on his face.

Killing someone was very simple.

NH

But their original plan was to take this chance to make everyone turn on the Li family army and draw Jiang Ning out, but Jiang Ning realized this so quickly.

He didn't even give them a chance.

"I don't care about what you want to achieve. I just care about whether I can get what I want," snapped Fang Yin rudely.

"I've done what I was supposed to do, so it's your turn to prove yourself."

He glared at Jimmy and the iciness in his eyes sent a clear message.

If he could kill someone like Yeshma without a trace, then he could kill Jimmy this way too!

He could even wipe out Jimmy's entire clan!

If Jimmy didn't keep his promise and get him the rest of the Extreme Fist Technique Manual...

Killing others was very easy to Fang Yin. If he wanted to kill them, he would!

He didn't care who the other party was!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Everyone was selfish and did everything for their own benefit. Nobody wanted to suffer a loss.

Fang Yin was like that, and so was Jimmy.

They understood what each other meant. They were both wily old foxes, so they could be very cooperative if they wanted to, but if they fell out with one another, then they could be very cruel to one another too!

“Don’t worry,” said Jimmy with a smile. “I will do what I promised you.”

“In fact, there’s some news already.”

Fang Yin’s eyes narrowed. “You know where the pages are?”

“Yes, there are two more pages, and I’m very certain that they’re both within a Third World family,” said Jimmy with a nod. “One of them is with Yeshma’s backer, who’s one of the top powers of the Third World, the Rhode family!”

“And the other page?” Fang Yin’s eyes turned cold.

“I don’t have a confirmation on the other page yet.”

Jimmy looked at Fang Yin’s gaze and knew that Fang Yin was going to attempt to steal it from within the Rhode family.

“Mr Fang Yin, I would like to remind you that the Rhodes are not an ordinary family. The aristocratic power they’ve accumulated over the

NH

last few centuries should not be underestimated. Even if you could infiltrate them, you might not be able to come out.”

“In fact, you might not even be able to find where they’ve hidden the manual.”

Jimmy didn’t bother being polite.

It was true that Fang Yin was highly skilled, but which major aristocratic power didn’t have fighters like that?

There were so many fighters who were much more powerful than Fang Yin.

But of course, these major powers just remained low profile. If you weren’t in a powerful enough position, you would never know how mighty these powers were in the Third World!

“Oh? So formidable?” Fang Yin didn’t seem bothered.

He did intend to just take it from the family. That was the most direct and efficient method.

But he wasn’t stupid either. An aristocratic power that had managed to stand for a few centuries couldn’t be that simple.

“Hoho, I’m sure you know what to do,” Jimmy didn’t say anymore.

There was no need to. He had already said what he ought to say, and that was kind enough of him.

NH

They were just partners in this deal, and while he needed a powerful fighter like Fang Yin to help him get some things done, it didn't mean that he was wholly reliant on Fang Yin.

Besides, Fang Yin had succeeded in doing the one thing he wanted the most, which was to throw the Middle East into chaos.

He had other ways to settle the rest.

"I suggest that you continue to follow my method. That way, I can guarantee that I can get you the manual. If you prefer to do things your way, then you'll have to bear the consequences of doing that yourself." Jimmy leaned against the sofa and looked very calm.

He wasn't afraid even in front of a fighter like Fang Yin.

A tool was a tool, no matter how formidable. He just needed to use the right method to control this tool.

Fang Yin didn't say anything and just looked at Jimmy.

Working with someone like this was also a gamble to Fang Yin.

Since Fang Yin didn't respond, Jimmy continued, "If there's not problem, then continue to follow my plan. You just need to listen to my instructions and I promise that you'll definitely get what you want."

NH

He loved the feeling of controlling others.

Especially since the other party was such a powerful one.

“Sure.” Fang Yin narrowed his eyes and didn’t say more than that.

“We’ll have a good time working together, so don’t worry about it,” said Jimmy with a smile.

He got up and wanted to shake Fang Yin’s hand, but Fang Yin ignored his outstretched arm and left.

He didn’t have such a habit.

Jimmy wasn’t angry either. He watched Fang Yin leave, then sat back down and took a deep puff of the cigar on the side.

A faint fragrance slowly filled the air.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

“It’s not that easy to escape my control.”

Immediately after Jimmy uttered these words, his face suddenly turned red and he started coughing violently.

COUGH COUGH!

He cupped his hand over his mouth and his hand was immediately covered with the blood he coughed out and his face instantly turned as white as a sheet.

“You...”

Jimmy’s heart pounded violently as he opened his mouth and his eyes were filled with rage.

He had been poisoned!

Only Fang Yin would have done this!

Jimmy was trembling and the smug expression on his face had completely disappeared.

He thought that he had control over Fang Yin, but now, Fang Yin had used his actions to tell him that he wasn’t in control of Fang Yin at all.

On top of that, Jimmy had no idea what poison was in his body right now.

He grabbed his phone. “Doctor! Doctor! Come to my office now! Hurry up!”

Jimmy was going crazy.

He quickly called a doctor over to check his

condition.

But even though this was a famous doctor, he couldn't figure out what poison Jimmy had in his body.

"Send it for testing! Analysis! What poison is this? Will it kill me? How do I get rid of it?!" Jimmy was practically shouting.

He became more and more anxious, and felt a stuffiness in his chest and difficulty in breathing.

"Mr Jimmy, this poison is very strange. I can't find it in your bloodstream at all, so it has probably gone into your bone marrow..."

WOONG...

Jimmy felt his head spin.

Into his bone marrow?

What poison did Fang Yin feed him?!

"But don't worry, based on my experience, this poison is not very strong and it will not cause death at the moment..."

Jimmy waved his hands. "Get out!"

Of course he knew that Fang Yin wouldn't kill him immediately.

Fang Yin needed him to obtain the Extreme Fist Technique Manual, so he wouldn't kill him off now.

NH

“I’ve underestimated you!” Jimmy clenched his teeth.

His expression was threatening.

He didn’t expect Fang Yin to be so scheming. He had been very careful already, but he didn’t think that Fang Yin’s use of poison to be at such a high level.

No wonder he had been able to kill Yeshma so easily!

Jimmy had been too careless.

He took a deep breath and forced himself to calm down.

Fang Yin wouldn’t kill him so easily. At least Jimmy would stay alive until Fang Yin got his hands on the pages of the manual.

But it meant that Jimmy had nothing else to use against Fang Yin.

His breathing slowly calmed down. After going through so much in life, Jimmy was also no ordinary person, and he quickly recalibrated his emotions.

“Continue with our plan!” he gave orders after making a phone call. After hanging up, he closed his eyes and remained seated as he started thinking very carefully about whether there were anymore loopholes in his plans.

Meanwhile.

NH

The warzone in the Middle East had become a complete mess.

Some of the mercenary armies had started to fight each other over simple verbal disagreements.

They just needed a reason to fight. In fact, they didn't mind fighting for no reason.

There was also some movement within the Li family army.

Li Genhong had managed to survive the poisoning attack, so even though he was very weak now, at least he was alive. This was very uplifting news to the rest of the army.

"Everyone is to guard our homeland, and not participate in this fight!" That was Li Genhong's command.

Regardless of what storms were raging out there, the Li family army was going to protect themselves, guard their camp fiercely and not become part of any fight.

Once this news got out, all those who were eyeing the Li family army and wanted to get them involved didn't know what to do anymore.

"It doesn't matter who tries to provoke us or what happens out there, guard our home well! Let them go ahead and fight if they want to!"

Li Genhong continued to send reminders and insisted that none of his soldiers leave the

campsite at all.

It was now the easiest time to turn this campsite into a forbidden territory!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Li Genhong was now a victim.

He was someone who was sympathized with and protected. If others wanted to attack the Li family army, they needed a proper reason to.

They initially wanted to blame Yeshma's death on Li Genhong, but it was impossible to do that now.

Both Yeshma and Li Genhong were victims, except that Yeshma had died while Li Genhong barely survived.

The one who survived was most worthy of sympathy.

Jiang Ning was telling Li Genhong to play up this pitiful survivor card.

The Li family army was not going out there to fight for power nor more benefits and was just trying to guard what they already had, so nobody would be thick-skinned enough to create trouble for them.

Besides, the Li family army wasn't an important nor powerful presence in the first place. If Yeshma hadn't paid them a visit, many people might not have bothered about them at all.

For a long period of time, none of the Li family army soldiers left the camp, even though there was a fierce fight just three kilometers away from them.

They continued to remain unmoved even in a storm.

NH

Li Genhong was still recuperating, so the entire army was on standby. The soldiers patrolling the outside of the camp exuded nothing but murder.

Anyone who dared to come near was an enemy!

Anyone who tried to hurt their commander-in-chief was an enemy!

They would wipe their enemies out!

A hurt lion was the most terrifying. Everyone in this warzone knew this well.

It was a dumb for anyone to provoke the Li family army now.

The Li family army had also won several battles and were incredibly good at fighting, so their morale was at its highest now, and only an idiot would try to provoke them.

Everyone just watched and waited.

Li Genhong just sat in Jiang Ning's room all day. He couldn't go out and couldn't show himself either.

The smell of the medicine and supplements that came in every day was enough to make him puke.

"The commanders want to see you, but I've held all of them off," Li Zhengshang shook his head. "They're very concerned about you, but you can't show yourself now."

They had allowed Li Genhong to step out once

NH

and made him look as pale and weak as possible. He just appeared in front of the commanders for a short while and came back.

Jiang Ning just needed him to go out once so that everyone knew that he was really still alive, but was recuperating from a severe bout of poisoning.

“It’s a really huge mess out there now,” Li Zhengshang clicked his tongue. “All the top mercenary armies have gone all out to fight for Holy Sword Mercenary Army’s territory. It’s such a tragedy.”

The Holy Sword Mercenary Army had no leader, and the few commanders under Yeshma had their own plans for the army, so they weren’t united at all.

A huge fight was ignited and the entire warzone was now engulfed in an explosive sort of atmosphere.

Some of them didn’t intend to fight, but they had no choice since the fight crossed into their territories.

Some of them had been waiting for a chance to get more resources for themselves.

Once Yeshma died, all sorts of people reared their ugly heads.

None of the powers backing these mercenary armies would miss this chance to reallocate the resources here.

NH

Only the Li family army refused to participate.

A few challengers would come and provoke them from time to time, but they were all fiercely defeated by the Li family army quickly.

The prowess of the Li family army was really shocking.

The ordinary soldiers were already more disciplined than others in terms of their physical and mental states. But there was also a batch of special soldiers who were ridiculously powerful too!

Nobody could hold up against them once they attacked!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

After several small battles outside the campsite, the Li family army camp was finally quiet.

The bigger mercenary armies weren't so stupid as to waste their resources on fighting the Li family army either.

No matter how bad the storm was outside, the Li family army camp remained quiet and at peace.

“Since the order has been messed up, all the backers of these armies will not let go of this chance to fight for more.” Jiang Ning was very nonchalant about this since it wasn't the first time this was happening. Yeshma himself got to his position also because Jiang Ning had messed up this place the last time. “What we need to do now is to take this opportunity to make sure that everyone knows that the Li family army camp and its people are a forbidden territory.”

With such a reputation in place, it would be easier on them in the future.

The environment had to be stable before Li Genhong could focus his energies on the mine.

This was a very important step to Lin Group's expansion.

Most people would think that Jiang Ning was crazy for continuing to think about his business under such messy circumstances, but all of this was completely within Jiang Ning's control.

What he needed to do was to make sure that nobody made trouble for the Li family army while

NH

still maintaining their control over this area.

Even if they only had 3,000 soldiers, they were going to become a force to be reckoned with.

“According to our current situation, that’s not a problem,” said Li Genhong. “As long as our country needs us to start mining, we can start immediately.”

His camp was sitting on the source of the raw material for Lin Group’s up and coming integrated circuit, so it was a very important place.

He had to fight in order to secure his position here.

Even if he only had 3,000 soldiers, as long as he could turn this place into a forbidden territory that nobody could penetrate, then nobody would dare to provoke them for no reason.

The Third World powers were all very intelligent, so picking their fights was part of business too.

Business was all about profiting. Nobody would want to suffer losses for no reason.

“But...” Li Genhong was a little worried. “Once they’re done fighting and they’ve stabilized the order again, I’m afraid they’ll still target us.”

It wasn’t just for territory in this warzone, but because of Lin Group.

Yeshma’s death was sudden and shocking, but it was obvious that someone had been eyeing them

NH

all this while. And the ones eyeing them were definitely Lin Group's competitors.

Since they even dared to kill Yeshma, they were probably prepared to launch other attacks.

At the moment, all the Third World powers were busy fighting for more resources, so they wouldn't come knocking on the Li family army's door now and waste resources.

But what would happen once the fighting was over?

All those keeping an eye on Lin Group in secret were definitely eyeing this silica mine too.

"I'm hoping that they'll attack, actually," said Jiang Ning calmly. "I'll leave one person here for you."

Li Genhong froze and the first thing that came to mind was how the soldiers next to him had been shot dead when Jiang Ning rescued him from Halen's men.

He could still feel the warm blood of those soldiers on his face.

It was that mysterious sniper!

"He will protect you in the darkness until all those people who want to attack the Li family army behave themselves," said Jiang Ning.

Li Genhong gulped.

He still didn't know who that person was, where

NH

he was hiding and what identity he had.

He was mysterious, and scarily powerful!

With that sort of fighter protecting him in the darkness and supporting the Li family army, he had nothing to be afraid of.

“There’s only one problem with this guy,” laughed Jiang Ning as he looked at Li Genhong. “He only kills commanders-in-chief!”

WOONG...

Li Genhong felt his head spin, and it was suddenly filled with a strange thought. He suddenly wished that all the commanders-in-chief of the major armies would come and make trouble for him...

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

No matter what storm was brewing out there, it had nothing to do with the Li family army nor Li Genhong.

Anyone who dared to make trouble here was dead meat!

“The situation here is tense, but your army will remain peaceful. It’ll be good if someone comes knocking on your door, then you can make an example out of them and show others what you’re made of,” said Jiang Ning. “I’ll leave these fellows here.”

He pointed to Brother Gou and the wolves.

Li Genhong was thrilled to hear this.

Besides that mysterious super sniper, the wolves would be here too. He didn’t need to fear anything.

“Then Mr Jiang...”

“I’m going to do some business discussions,” said Jiang Ning. “Since the mining part is settled, Lin Group can start on their next move.”

He had to follow the rules of the corporate world to engage the corporate world. He followed the rules of the circles in which he had to operate in. This was Jiang Ning’s principle.

Moreover, the one controlling the direction was Lin Yuzhen.

Li Genhong was in control of this area, so there

NH

was no problem with the mining, refining and shipping process.

In terms of safety, the wolves were staying here along with Fei in the shadows, as well as these 3,000 soldiers who were guarding their homeland with their lives. This was a perfect arrangement.

Being calm in the midst of a storm was something that nobody else would have dared to dream about.

And now, Jiang Ning was going to push Lin Group into the Third World!

He didn't stay any longer and didn't leave many instructions behind. He left everything to Li Genhong to handle and quietly left the region.

No matter how crazy the storm became, as long as the Li family army was here, he didn't need to be here anymore.

If something still went wrong, then it meant that he had chosen the wrong guy for this job in the first place.

.....

When Jiang Ning returned to Donghai, Lin Yuzhen wasn't at home.

Since Jiang Ning wasn't at home during this time, Lin Yuzhen didn't think it made a difference whether she went home or not. She had to work either way.

NH

The research and development of a new integrated circuit was progressing well.

Luo Lin and his team had plenty of experience in this field, and it was proving very useful now.

According to their plan, they were going to start with a prototype first. Once the prototype proved successful, they would go through multiple testing and use the data to finally create the actual integrated circuit, and they had to succeed on their first try.

Lin Yuzhen knew that many people had their eye on Lin Group, especially those from Silicon Valley.

Lin Group now represented China's integrated circuit R&D industry, even though their lab was newly formed.

If they failed, then that would be a big blow to the morale of the local IC industry.

And everyone overseas would laugh at them.

Lin Yuzhen didn't want things to turn out like that.

She supported the lab to the maximum she could.

Funding, space, facilities, extremely rare equipment – she had paid a lot of money in order to get all these things in for her team via Lee Group.

If all this effort still resulted in failure, not only would Lin Yuzhen be disappointed, but Luo Lin and his team would also feel guilty towards Jiang

Ning and Lin Yuzhen.

“Professor Luo, if you need anything, just let me know. Lin Group will do our best to support you. There’s no limit on the amount of funding we’re putting into this.”

This was not the first time Lin Yuzhen was saying this.

Her determination helped Luo Lin and his team feel more confident.

“Yuzhen, to be honest with you, more than a decade ago, all of us wanted to create an integrated circuit our country could call their own.”

“But at that time, even though we were filled with great motivation, the environment locally was... really difficult.”

Luo Lin sighed and shook his head. “Back then, your skills and talent weren’t important. It was more important to butter up to the right people and learn to entertain them. Otherwise, none of the government officials would even approve of your research.”

When he started talking about these things, he started to get angry.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

If that wasn't the case, these scientists wouldn't have been forced to leave the country and develop so many things for those companies in Silicon Valley.

But they had no choice!

The environment back home didn't place any importance on technology and it was difficult for them to just give up on their expertise.

They always looked forward to the day that they could come back. They had to come back!

If a corporation like Lin Group had been willing to stand up for them in the past, their country would definitely be leading in this industry by now.

"We'll be able to close this gap or even surpass the others," said Lin Yuzhen seriously. "I believe that."

Luo Lin nodded.

"We all believe that."

"So what else are you missing?" Lin Yuzhen had dropped by the lab because she wanted to see if she could be of help.

Luo Lin smiled. He was really touched to see how much importance Lin Yuzhen placed on this.

"We don't lack anything at the moment. But if you really want to talk about it, we're missing talents. We're always missing talents."

NH

Luo Lin took a deep breath. This industry wasn't easy, so even though they were experts in the field, there were still areas where they weren't so good in. They needed more talents in order to make up for all the areas they were lacking in.

Research always relied on a team of people. It was hard to succeed with just one person.

"There will be a Technology Convention in Silicon Valley. Yuzhen, I'm sure you know about it, right?"

"Yes, I do."

"A number of top engineers should be attending the convention, so if you could get a few people from there, it'll be greatly beneficial to us."

The Technology Convention held annually had slowly become a place where the major tech companies recruited talents and increased their network. It was difficult to poach these people immediately, but it was a good place to start.

Lin Yuzhen could use this opportunity too.

"I have the same thoughts," Lin Yuzhen smiled.

She wasn't very good at doing this sort of thing, but she knew that talents were the most important in this sort of industry. Jiang Ning had told her about this many times already.

"I'll go and have a look, and it'll be a good chance to publicize the company."

Lin Group was now longer only based in Las

NH

Vegas, and it wasn't only into the beauty or mining industry. Their high tech base was now even more important than ever.

After walking out of the lab, Lin Yuzhen saw that her BMW was still parked at the entrance, so she pulled the back door open and got in.

"Go back to the office," she said without even looking up.

"Not going home?"

Lin Yuzhen looked up with a start when she heard this voice and stared at Jiang Ning seated in the driver's seat.

"Hubby! When did you come back?" She pounced over and flung her arms around his neck. "You terrible fellow! Why didn't you tell me?"

She was still wondering how the driver had the same voice as Jiang Ning's.

This horrible man didn't even tell her that he was back.

"I wanted to give you a surprise." Jiang Ning touched his face and purposely said, "You've kissed me so hard that there's saliva all over my face. You've got to learn to hold yourself back a little, wifey."

"Tsk." Lin Yuzhen got out from the back seat and sat in the front passenger seat. She glared at Jiang Ning and said, "Sure. From now on, I'll hold myself back. Let's see who gives in first."

NH

Jiang Ning immediately gave in.

This girl was getting more and more sly now.

“We’re going home. Mum said that you haven’t been resting well for many days now.” Jiang Ning frowned. “So that’s how you take care of yourself when I’m not around?”

“I’m busy at work...”

“Then I’ll close the company. I didn’t run this company to tire you out.”

“Hubby...” Lin Yuzhen pulled her arms around Jiang Ning’s neck.

She knew that he wouldn’t close Lin Group now, but she really loved that heartwarming feeling inside when she heard how much Jiang Ning cared about her.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

At the Lin bungalow.

Everyone was enjoying themselves.

Ye Shan and the rest had come over since Jiang Ning was finally back. They had many things to talk about.

But more importantly, the food in the Lin house was simply too delicious. Even though Ye Qingwu was busy with promotional activities, sometimes she would really crave for Su Mei's cooking and fly to Donghai just to eat before returning...

After everyone had eaten their fill.

Tan Xing was leisurely making tea in the courtyard.

"Extreme Martial Arts Academy is doing well, and we've been promoting Chinese martial arts to more and more places."

His face was still a little red. He couldn't resist the wines that the Lin family kept.

"Also, Fang Qiu came back once to say that the eight reclusive clans are all resting and recuperating now. Once you've got all the pages, they'll start to study them again."

Tan Xing glanced at Jiang Ning with a smile.

He really admired Jiang Ning, because he could hardly believe that a young man like Jiang Ning could get everything done to this extent.

NH

Jiang Ning had made a forbidden territory out of Donghai, so nobody dared to make trouble here. And even the eight reclusive clans of Mount Zhongnan were so reverent towards Jiang Ning.

Even without Jiang Ning around, leaving Fang Qiu as his representative was enough to keep them in check.

“The martial arts circle is considered stable now, so the important thing is to find the manual.”

Jiang Ning nodded.

“That’s right. We’re now searching for the last two pages of the manual, but there are no clues yet.”

Everyone was looking for those two pages. Butler Zhao’s information network, Assassins Group’s network and even their bases in Seoul and Las Vegas were hunting for these pages.

But no clues turned up.

He was very sure now that those last two pages were within the major powers of the Third World.

Lin Group had to enter this world partly for the sake of expansion, but also to hunt down the rest of the manual.

“Punk, it’s going to be troublesome, right?” Ye Shan glanced at Jiang Ning and put his teacup down. “I’ve heard Qingwu talk about the things you’ve done overseas. None of them is a small matter.”

NH

“Qingwu is good at flattering others,” laughed Jiang Ning. He saw Ye Shan glare at him, so he shook his head and said, “It’s not troublesome. As long as I can get some clues, nothing is troublesome.”

“What do you intend to do?”

“I’ll let nature take its course,” said Jiang Ning. “I’ll take Yuzhen for a holiday first. It’s been a long time since we went on a date.”

Ye Shan and Tan Xing exchanged glances. They felt like they had been forced to witness a mushy scene.

“Where are you two going?” Ye Shan actually continued probing.

“We’re going for a cruise,” said Jiang Ning. “Ever watched the movie Titanic?”

Ye Shan got up and started keeping the tea set.

Tan Xing shook his head and kept his hands behind his back. He wanted to talk to Jiang Ning about serious things, but somehow the more he talked to Jiang Ning, the more he would suddenly feel the urge to find someone to date.

“How boring.” Jiang Ning shrugged as he watched the two men leave.

These old men wouldn’t understand.

Being in love was the most wonderful thing in the world.

NH

The Technology Convention this year was going to be held on a cruise, and it was an extremely luxurious cruise.

He had found out from Lin Yuzhen that the attendees included not just the elites of the industry, but also all the directors of those major tech companies.

Many of them were there with the same intention of poaching others.

Even if they didn't succeed in poaching someone, it was a good start and it was always good to expand their networks.

After all, nobody knew what might happen next.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Before getting on the cruise, Lin Yuzhen's mind was filled with nothing but work. She was still thinking about how she could get closer to people that Lin Group was targeting, how to start a conversation, how to link the conversation to her agenda, and what sort of conditions would convince these people.

But after she got onto the cruise, she only had one thought.

“Wow...”

Her eyes were beaming brightly.

“Don't you dare laugh at me for being ignorant!” Lin Yuzhen glared at Jiang Ning, who was trying hard not to laugh. “I've really never come on a cruise before.”

Even though she was the one in charge of Lin Group, just slightly over a year ago, she was still riding a cheap scooter to work.

She hardly even took a plane.

“Do you like it?” asked Jiang Ning. Lin Yuzhen quickly shook her head.

She was afraid that if she said she liked it, Jiang Ning would buy one for her. She knew him only too well.

This thing...probably cost at least a few billion, right?

“I only like you.” Lin Yuzhen was smart now. If he

NH

bought anything she liked, then he could go ahead and try to buy himself!

Jiang Ning laughed and reached out to pinch her face, but she quickly avoided his hand.

“We’re in public, Hubby. Now I’m the CEO of Lin Group! Please just follow me closely, Secretary Jiang,” said Lin Yuzhen very seriously.

“Yes, CEO Lin,” replied Jiang Ning in an equally serious voice.

But immediately after that, he took Lin Yuzhen’s hand in his. He didn’t care who she was supposed to be.

She had only one identity to him, and that was his wife.

The cruise was really huge.

At one glance it felt like one was still on land. Above the cruise was the blue skies and it made one feel completely relaxed and free.

The sea breeze gently blew through Lin Yuzhen’s hair. It didn’t mess up her hair and made her exude a sort of elegance instead.

Her aura as well as her beautiful face easily attracted a lot of attention.

“Hello there, may I see your invitation cards please?”

The two service staff at the entrance carried

NH

themselves very well. Most other places wouldn't have left them as merely entrance staff.

Lin Yuzhen handed him the invitation card and the staff studied it seriously.

"My apologies, but there is only one name on this invitation card, so only Miss Lin Yuzhen may enter."

Lin Yuzhen frowned slightly.

"The organizers didn't say that only one person would be allowed."

Jiang Ning didn't have any position within Lin Group, so he wouldn't get an invitation card. She had already enquired about this and nobody said anything about this rule. Were they purposely making things difficult for her?

"I'm really sorry, but in order to make sure that the experts at the convention are not affected and to ensure everyone's safety on board, we have to do this," said the staff with a smile. He politely looked at Jiang Ning and said, "Sir, without an invitation, you can't go in."

Many people around them started looking.

Many of them had brought a partner with no invitation, but nobody had stopped them from entering.

So it was obvious that someone was picking on Lin Yuzhen now.

NH

But nobody spoke up for them and just watched the show, since that was their little entertainment for the day.

The other men were especially gleeful to see a man embarrass himself in front of a goddess like woman like Lin Yuzhen.

“So one can’t go in without an invitation card?”
Jiang Ning expression remained calm.

He could tell that someone was trying to make things difficult for him. He knew these types of tricks well.

“That’s right, that’s the rule,” replied the staff calmly. “Only those with an invitation card are our distinguished guests and will be able to board the cruise.”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Jiang Ning nodded and fished out an invitation card from his pocket, then placed it on the staff's hand.

"So as a service staff, this is the sort of attitude you have towards your distinguished guests?"

The staff immediately froze.

He looked a little surprised as he opened Jiang Ning's invitation card to see that Jiang Ning's name was written clearly on it, and he was supposed to be an expert engineer!

"You have an invitation card?"

"Of course I do," said Jiang Ning calmly. "You didn't ask for mine."

The staff's face immediately reddened.

It was as if he had just been slapped in the face.

"Can we go in now?" Jiang Ning took back the invitation card and looked calmly at the staff.

"This way please." The staff's face was still red and tried his best to look elegant and poised, but there was clearly an angry look in his eyes.

Jiang Ning ignored him and walked in as he held Lin Yuzhen's hand.

Everyone around them started laughing.

They could tell that this staff was trying to make things difficult for Jiang Ning, but he turned out

NH

not to be the boss of some company but an actual expert in the field.

On this boat, experts in the industry were treated even better than the bosses of companies!

“When did you become an engineer?” whispered Lin Yuzhen. She was surprised too. “Is this invitation card...real?”

“I’ll refund you if it’s a fake,” whispered Jiang Ning back to Lin Yuzhen. “Only the name is fake.”

Lin Yuzhen froze for a moment before she burst out laughing and rolled her eyes at him.

She just knew that Jiang Ning couldn’t possibly be so honest and allow others to bully him for nothing.

There were many people on the cruise now. Everyone on this boat was either rich or of high standing, or they were world famous scientists in the field.

Jiang Ning walked around casually with Lin Yuzhen.

The convention only began the next day, so it was important to relax now.

“It’s so rare for us to go out on a date, and I’ve been wondering if I’ve neglected your feelings.”

The two of them walked and talked at the same time.

NH

“Lin Group is expanding faster and faster each day, and the burden on your shoulders will only become heavier and the work will get tougher. It makes my heart ache watching you work.”

Lin Yuzhen looked at Jiang Ning with her pretty eyes. “It’s not tough. You’re having it tougher.”

She knew very well that without Jiang Ning, she wouldn’t have come this far.

Lin Group wouldn’t even have made it out of Donghai.

This world was very practical and very cruel. Lin Yuzhen was pure hearted but not stupid. She knew this very well.

Without Jiang Ning around to resolve all these problems around her, Lin Group wouldn’t be what they were now.

She knew that Jiang Ning was helping her to fulfil her dreams, so she had to work hard too.

She had to become a woman who was really qualified to stand next to Jiang Ning.

Otherwise, women like Long Ling’er and Amelia would be indignant about losing to her.

“Our target is just those two scientists, but I heard that they’re very hard to poach,” Lin Yuzhen moved the topic back to work. “People like them are no longer attracted to material things like money or status.”

NH

That's what made things especially difficult.

“No worries, we're just here to have a look. If we can get them, that'll be best. But if we can't, it's alright too,” smiled Jiang Ning. “Professor Luo and team are actually enough already.”

Jiang Ning knew how hard it was to get these people in their team, and he didn't think they would succeed anyway. These talents all had deep ties to their own country too.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

“I understand, I’ll just take it as a good experience then.”

Lin Yuzhen took Jiang Ning’s hand and walked towards the restaurants inside.

A pair of eyes were staring coldly at Lin Yuzhen and Jiang Ning from afar.

“Tsk,” he scoffed quietly. “Is his invitation card real? I don’t think I sent him one.”

“It’s real, I’ve authenticated it, Mr Jimmy,” replied the staff.

His expression was equally nasty. He was just a service staff, but his pride as being someone under Jimmy made it difficult for him to accept the humiliation he suffered earlier in front of so many people.

Jiang Ning had smacked this pride of his into shape in that instant.

Jiang Ning had emphasized on the fact that he was nothing but a service staff!

“Alright, I get it. You make arrangements accordingly.” Jimmy impatiently dismissed the staff with a wave of his hands.

His expression darkened as he watched Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen from behind, but suddenly started coughing uncontrollably. He quickly used a handkerchief to cover his mouth.

There was some blood on the handkerchief and

Jimmy went pale.

“Damn it!”

He returned to his luxurious room and saw Fang Yin seated there. A crazed and murderous look flashed in his eyes for a moment, but disappeared soon after.

Fang Yin had noticed that look, but he wasn't bothered by it.

“Mr Fang Yin, this sort of place doesn't seem to suit you, so why come all the way here personally?” Jimmy gave him a fake smile.

“I'm here to send you some medicine.” Fang Yin just pulled out a small bottle of pills from his pocket. “Eat one every week and you will feel better. But of course, this isn't the antidote.”

This was as good as admitting that he had poisoned Jimmy!

Jimmy grit his teeth and his entire body was trembling.

But he didn't throw his temper or curse at Fang Yin. He just calmly took the bottle, took a pill out and swallowed it.

“So I should thank Mr Fang Yin for helping me ease the painful symptoms.” He felt much better shortly after taking the pill.

Jimmy narrowed his eyes. “Jiang Ning is on this cruise too. If you want to see him, I can make

NH

arrangements.”

“No need,” said Fang Yin. “We’ll meet again sooner or later, but now is not the time.”

He looked at Jimmy. “You said that one of the guests this time has a page of the Extreme Fist Technique Manual. Which one is he?”

Fang Yin was here solely for the manual.

He knew that Jiang Ning wasn’t here to poach talents either. He was here for the manual too!

“I can’t tell you now,” Jimmy shook his head and laughed coldly. “It’s not the right time yet.”

He watched as Fang Yin looked more and more coldly and murderously at him, but he remained nonchalant.

“Even if I told you, you won’t be able to get your hands on it. Your tactics won’t work.”

Did Fang Yin intend to just snatch it from that person? Who would carry that thing on them all the time? Even if Fang Yin kidnapped the person and tried to threaten his family, this sort of thing was nothing unusual to these Third World powers.

They would never let any member of the family be of significant value to the clan. That way, even if they lost a few members’ lives, it wouldn’t affect the clan too adversely.

Jimmy’s family worked this way as well, so his life

NH

wasn't really that important to his own family. If he wanted to live, he had to rely on himself.

“If you want that manual, you have to listen to me,” said Jimmy without holding back. “Even if you poison me, it’s meaningless.”

He sat down slowly and leaned back against the sofa as he looked up slightly. He didn't look like someone who had been poisoned and threatened at all.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Someone who had managed to get to his position knew well that if he gave in to Fang Yin, then he would really be controlled by Fang Yin and he would be doomed.

When a strong person fought with another strong person, sometimes one would win by sheer confidence.

Jimmy couldn't fight, but he was powerful in the corporate circles, so he exuded great confidence too.

Jimmy met Fang Yin's eyes and didn't seem any weaker even though he was suffering from the effects of poison.

"Aren't you afraid to die?"

"Of course I'm afraid to die. But so what if I end up dying?" Jimmy scoffed coldly. "You don't understand how the Third World families work at all. Even the head of the family wouldn't be threatened by you, do you understand?"

Fang Yin frowned slightly.

"These are aristocratic families that managed to survive for hundreds of years. You think they'd let one person truly control the entire family?"

Jimmy's laughter was a little disdainful with some mockery.

He was mocking Fang Yin for thinking that he could do whatever he wanted just because he had poisoned Jimmy.

That had to be a joke.

“You can go ahead and poison anyone you like and kill me if you wish, but you’d never get the manual this way. Never!”

“If you think that venting your frustrations is more important than getting the manual, then you can kill me anytime.”

Jimmy sounded so nonchalant about this.

It seemed like he wouldn’t even yelp if Fang Yin killed him now.

This attitude made Fang Yin feel very uncomfortable, and he felt like he wasn’t able to control Jimmy at all.

“Mr Fang, a partnership requires mutual respect, and you haven’t done a very good job in this aspect,” said Jimmy pointedly. “The attitude you have is really not one of a person who will achieve great things in life.”

“I don’t need you to teach me,” snapped Fang Yin.

“It’s just a reminder.” Jimmy got up. “The cruise has everything, so if you still want to stick around, there’s plenty of food and entertainment to make you happy.”

Then he pulled the door open and left the room.

The moment he shut the door behind him, Jimmy’s expression darkened.

NH

“Mr Jimmy!” His subordinates greeted him with great respect.

“Keep an eye on him, and find a way to keep him on the cruise!” whispered Jimmy as a crazed and murderous glint flashed in his eyes.

“Yes, Mr Jimmy!”

Jimmy then quickly left after that.

Jimmy didn't want someone who poisoned him to stay alive anymore.

But there was probably only one person on this boat who could kill Fang Yin.

Why did he gather so many people to organize this Technology Convention and spend so much to attract Lin Group and Jiang Ning here?

He did want to see the CEO of Lin Group and Jiang Ning for himself, but he also wanted to use Jiang Ning to kill off Fang Yin.

He knew about how Fang Yin had a feud with Jiang Ning. Back in Korea, Fang Yin nearly died at Jiang Ning's hands. So if his plans on this cruise went well, then Fang Yin could forget about leaving this boat alive.

Since this blasted old man dared to poison him, then Jimmy didn't want to keep him around anymore.

It wasn't difficult for Jimmy to choose between the value that Fang Yin had and his own life.

NH

The cruise slowly moved forward and the horn that sounded at nightfall seemed to welcome the night almost immediately.

The sky soon darkened and all one could hear was the sound of the lashing waves. The atmosphere was so relaxing.

“It’s too windy outside, let’s go to the restaurant.”

After standing on the deck for while and enjoying the sea breeze, Lin Yuzhen felt a lot more awake. This was the first time she was experiencing this sort of thing and it was really beautiful.

Jiang Ning took Lin Yuzhen’s hand and entered the restaurant. The organizer had already arranged for dinner.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

More than ten tables were placed neatly in the restaurant. There were buffet tables on both sides and they were so exquisitely arranged, it was a scenic view in itself, and one could hardly bear to eat these beautiful things.

“If the Legend of Shengcheng were here, she’d eat this cruise broke,” teased Jiang Ning.

“Don’t talk about her like that! She has to get married someday you know?” said Lin Yuzhen. “What if others find out about this reputation of hers?”

If Su Yun were really here and heard these two tease her so mercilessly, she would stomp her feet and polish off all the food here to make sure the two of them were deeply embarrassed!

They picked some food for themselves and walked to one of the tables to sit.

Just after they put their plates down and were about to eat, a staff walked over and smiled while he said politely, “I’m sorry, but both of you cannot sit here.”

Jiang Ning looked up and saw that it was the same staff that had tried to block him at the entrance earlier.

This guy was really here to pick on them.

“Do I need an invitation card to sit here too?” said Jiang Ning. “Is the organizer afraid that someone might sneak in and steal some food?”

NH

“No, sir, you’re mistaken,” said the staff. “The seats here are prearranged.”

“Only those worth \$10 billion are allowed to sit at this table.”

“That table is for those worth \$20 billion, while that one is for those worth \$50 billion.”

The staff continued to smile, but there was a smug look at the back of his eyes. “According to our information, Lin Group is currently worth less than \$10 billion, so I’m afraid both of you cannot sit at this table.”

Lin Yuzhen had a nasty expression on her face.

This fellow was only a service staff and just needed to attend to his own business, but he kept coming to create trouble for them.

Of course, she knew that someone was getting this staff to purposely make things difficult for her and Jiang Ning so that they would embarrass themselves. That way, none of the talents on this cruise would want to follow them.

There would be no chance of that happening!

“We have to sit according to how much we’re worth?” Jiang Ning stood up and suddenly lifted his hand.

PAK!

He sent that staff flying with a loud slap and the staff crashed heavily on the floor as he clutched

NH

his face and started howling.

“How...how could you hit me?”

“Because I also slap others according to how much they’re worth,” said Jiang Ning calmly. “I don’t suppose you’re worth more than \$10 billion, right? So one slap is enough.”

The staff opened his mouth but couldn’t get a single word out. He didn’t expect Jiang Ning to hit him.

This cruise belonged to the Jimmy’s family!

Everyone was looking at them, with some looking at Jiang Ning, and others looking at the staff.

Some of them took the moral high ground and murmured about how Jiang Ning was ill mannered and ungentlemanly. But before they could continue, they were all frightened into silence by Jiang Ning’s terrifying stare.

They were sure that if they continued talking, Jiang Ning would come over and slap them according to how much they were worth.

“Do not think that you can simply bite anyone just because you’re someone’s dog,” said Jiang Ning as he looked down at the staff. “Look carefully, because there are some people that dogs shouldn’t go near.”

He stood in front of the staff and stared down at him like a huge mountain crushing on the staff. The immense pressure made the staff feel a

NH

terror inside him. He nearly stopped breathing and all the color drained from his face.

The air also seemed to suddenly turn icy cold and he shuddered all over.

Jiang Ning stopped staring so intensely and the suffocating pressure instantly lifted. He smiled and looked at the staff, "So where should those worth \$100 billion sit?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

\$100 billion?

Was Jiang Ning saying he was worth \$100 billion?

Some of them couldn't help but laugh, but they all shut up when they saw Jiang Ning's glare.

Jiang Ning wasn't going to show any mercy if he wanted to thrash them.

If someone familiar with Jiang Ning were here, he would know that Jiang Ning was being humble. \$100 billion was just the amount in one account.

But the staff didn't dare to argue back. He knew that Jiang Ning was a vicious one, and a small fry like him couldn't afford to offend him at all.

This slap was so heavy that his mouth was still numb and his teeth were loose.

"So which table should I sit at?" Jiang Ning asked again.

He stared down at the staff, and that look was enough to kill!

"That...that table," he quietly replied in a trembling voice as he pointed to the table right in front.

Jiang Ning nodded, picked up the plates and brought Lin Yuzhen over to that table.

Only one person was seated at that table, and he frowned slightly when he saw Jiang Ning walk over.

NH

“I’m sorry, but you can’t sit here.” Lance Salo didn’t bother being polite, and his voice even sounded disdainful. “I don’t sit with people who have no manners.”

Lance was from the Salo family, a famous aristocratic family in Europe, so they valued manners the most.

Jiang Ning had hit a service staff in public, and that was something that only those who were ill mannered with poor upbringing would do.

“Manners?” Jiang Ning laughed. “Didn’t they divide the seats according to one’s monetary worth? When did it become a matter of manners?”

Lance remained expressionless. “Please leave.”

“Wifey, this food is just average, and it’s not even as nice as the food served in our company canteen,” said Jiang Ning as if he hadn’t heard what Lance said at all. He started to tuck into the food with Lin Yuzhen. “But since we’re out here, then we shouldn’t be too picky.”

“As long as it’s not poisoned, and we can eat our fill, then we should be happy.”

Lance frowned even more deeply.

“This is such a high class restaurant and you think there might be poison in the food? How could you malign others like that?”

Lance became even unhappier with Jiang Ning’s

words.

This man wasn't gentlemanly, and he even falsely accused others!"

"I'm saying that yours is poisoned. Mine isn't," Jiang Ning took a bite of his own food and pointed to the food in front of Lance. "You can take a bite if you don't believe me."

Besides Lance, the two bodyguards standing behind him also had nasty expressions on their faces after hearing what Jiang Ning said.

They felt that Jiang Ning was a nutcase for spouting nonsense here. This was a very high class convention and it was held on such a luxurious cruise too. The organizer made sure that security was a priority here, and of course, as Lance's bodyguards, these two men were working hard to protect their boss too!

Jiang Ning was clearly challenging them now!

"Sir, you should not speak irresponsibly!" shouted one of the bodyguards.

Jiang Ning continued eating and glanced at him. "I've already said what I should have said, if you don't believe me, take a bite. If one of you dies, it's not my problem."

The bodyguard smiled coldly and took a step forward. "Mr Lance, this is my responsibility."

He had already checked and made sure there was no poison.

NH

It was true that part of his job included ensuring that nothing that Lance ate had any problems.

Lance didn't say anything, so the bodyguard immediately took a piece and ate it as he looked disdainfully at Jiang Ning. He was going to wait and watch Jiang Ning embarrass himself terribly.

But shortly after he swallowed it, he couldn't even say anything, because his face suddenly paled, his eyes immediately widened and his hand clutched his own throat desperately.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

“UNGH!”

Lance and the other bodyguard paled.

“What’s going on?” shouted Lance.

THUD!

But before that first bodyguard could say anything, he collapsed to the floor with a thud. His large and round eyes were filled with puzzlement and a tinge of disbelief.

Blackened blood dribbled from his mouth and Lance was terrified.

“He’s been poisoned!” The other bodyguards immediately surrounded Lance while one of the checked the body and exclaimed.

Everyone else started expressing their shock. Nobody expected the food in this restaurant to actually be poisoned.

Some of the people who were still eating quickly stuck a finger into their mouths to force themselves to retch.

The restaurant was soon filled with the sound of retching.

Jiang Ning frowned slightly. “Why don’t these people have any manners?”

Lance’s expression was pale. He hadn’t taken a mouthful yet, and if Jiang Ning hadn’t come over to sit, he would have just continued watching the

NH

show while eating. If that happened, he would be the one lying motionless on the floor right now.

“How...how did you know the food was poisoned?” he stared at Jiang Ning and spoke rather unkindly.

Jiang Ning ignored him as if he hadn't heard anything.

“Forget it, this noise has probably made you lose your appetite.” He took Lin Yuzhen's hand and said, “I've brought some instant noodles along, so let's go back to the room and have some. It's the pickled vegetable flavored ones.”

“Ok!” Lin Yuzhen's eyes lit up.

She only realized what she really liked to eat after being away from home.

The two of them just left hand in hand, as if nothing happened earlier.

The restaurant was already in chaos.

Lance watched Jiang Ning walk away and took a deep breath. “Find out who he is, and find out who tried to poison me!”

“Mr Lance, could he be the one...” whispered the bodyguard cautiously.

“Impossible.” Lance shook his head.

Jiang Ning had kept a good distance from Lance, and this was their first meeting, so there was no

NH

chance for him to poison the food. And even if he really painstakingly managed to poison the food, why would he warn Lance?

“If he really wanted to kill me, he could have just waited from afar. There was no need to come over to tell me about it.”

Lance was still feeling fearful. He very nearly became a dead body!

“Yes, Mr Lance. We’ll investigate immediately!” replied the bodyguards.

Jimmy soon came over. When he heard about what happened in the restaurant, he started cursing away in his heart.

When he found out that someone’s food had been poisoned, he was so angry that he wanted to kill someone now.

“Fang Yin? This bloody asshole! What is he trying to do?!” cursed Jimmy.

He knew that Fang Yin was capable of poisoning others without a trace. But why did he try to poison Lance at this time? Was he nuts?

Didn’t he want the Extreme Fist Technique Manual at all?!

“Everyone, please do not worry. The cruise is safe and I can promise you that this will not happen again!” said Jimmy loudly. “I will get to the bottom of this and make sure that there are no more food contamination issues.”

NH

He just said this was a case of food contamination, because he couldn't possibly say that someone had really poisoned the food.

“Mr Lance, I'm really sorry about this. I've already conducted an investigation and it turns out that the person in charge of purchasing the food did not go through stringent quality checks, so the food became contaminated. As for the bodyguard who lost his life, I will compensate you for that!”

He stood in front of Lance and looked terribly guilty.

Lance just glanced at him.

“Mr Jimmy, every single attendee for this convention are people of high standing in society, as well as world famous scientists. If your family can't even guarantee the safety of everyone on this boat, then you'd better let us dock!”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Lance's face was filled with fury as he scoffed.

The Salo family was also a Third World power, but the Salo family was much more powerful than the Jimmy family. Coming for this convention was already doing Jimmy a favor.

But something like that happened instead.

"Mr Lance, don't worry, there won't be any problems, I promise!" said Jimmy seriously.

Lance didn't say anything and left. His bodyguards followed closely behind and didn't dare to slack off.

Their professional intuition told them that this cruise was no longer safe.

Jimmy's expression darkened and walked quickly to where Fang Yin was.

Ruining his plans now was as good as ruining Fang Yin's plans as well. Was this old man stupid or something?

BAM!

Jimmy pushed the door open to see that Fang Yin was seated inside with a few pretty ladies seated around him.

"So you don't even know how to knock before coming in anymore?"

Fang Yin narrowed his eyes. He planned to leave since he wasn't used to being out at sea. But the

NH

women that were sent to him made it difficult for him to leave.

He hadn't touched women in a few decades now, so enjoying them now seemed even more enjoyable than before.

"Fang Yin! Are you nuts?!" Jimmy didn't care and just started yelling at Fang Yin immediately. "How could you poison someone at this point in time?! If you mess up my plans, then you can forget about getting that manual!"

Fang Yin frowned.

"What are you talking about?"

"Stop pretending!" Jimmy shouted angrily. "You poisoned the food of the restaurant! Who were you hoping to kill?!"

"I didn't set any poison," said Fang Yin calmly.

He glanced at Jimmy. The only person he really wanted to kill on this boat was Jiang Ning, but Fang Yin knew that his poison was useless on Jiang Ning, and because he wanted the pages in Jiang Ning's possession, he couldn't kill him.

"You're still trying to defend yourself now? Someone actually died already!" Jimmy hit the roof. "If this thing blows up, you can forget about the manual! When that happens, don't blame me..."

"I said that I didn't do it."

NH

Fang Yin slammed the table. The women next to him immediately paled and stiffened.

He glared at Jimmy. "Stop shouting uselessly in front of me! Get out!"

He was in a good mood and didn't want it to be ruined.

Fang Yin's expression darkened and Jimmy shuddered.

He knew how vicious Fang Yin could be. If he was really unhappy, Fang Yin might kill him!

"If I wanted to kill someone, why would I give you the chance to question me?" Fang Yin scoffed coldly.

Jimmy clenched his teeth and didn't say anymore.

It was true that Fang Yin's style was more like that. He took action swiftly and coldly without saying much.

But if it wasn't Fang Yin, who was it?

This cruise belonged to Jimmy's family, and he was very sure of the security on this boat. How could there be any issues with the security?

Jimmy got chased out and he wanted to kick the door in anger, but didn't do that in the end.

He said that he wasn't afraid to die, but he didn't really want to die. He knew that Fang Yin wouldn't kill him before getting what he wanted, but it

NH

didn't mean that Fang Yin would let him continue his life comfortably either.

Otherwise, Fang Yin wouldn't have poisoned him.

"Investigate this matter properly!" shouted Jimmy at his subordinates.

If he couldn't even secure his own cruise, then the Jimmys would be disgraced.

Lance was nearly poisoned to death today. If Lance actually died, then there was no way the Jimmys could ever work with the Salos.

He had to get to the bottom of this matter.

Meanwhile.

Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen were at the table in their own room and a fragrance filled the entire room.

If the Lin Group staff found out that their bosses, Lin Yuzhen and Jiang Ning, had boarded such a luxurious cruise but were hiding in their own room to eat instant noodles, they might faint on the spot.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

“It smells so good.” Lin Yuzhen took a deep breath and her face was slightly red. “The buffet food was too western. Everything looked really pretty, but it’s not tasty enough.”

“There’s a reason why our food is famous, you know?” Jiang Ning laughed.

DOONG DOONG DOONG.

Just when Jiang Ning was talking, someone started knocking on their door.

Jiang Ning got up and opened the door to see Lance standing outside.

“Who are you looking for?”

Lance raised his eyebrows slightly because of the fragrance that hit his nostrils the moment the door opened. He suddenly felt a little hungry now.

After finding out that his food was poisoned, he hadn’t dared to eat anything. It was hard for him to not feel hungry when he smelled the instant noodles inside the room.

“I wanted to ask how you knew the food was poisoned.”

Jiang Ning glanced at Lance, then at the few bodyguards behind Lance.

“You should be asking why those guys didn’t discover it,” said Jiang Ning calmly.

The bodyguards’ faces went red with

NH

embarrassment and didn't know how to respond.

Their carelessness cost them one of their colleagues, and nearly caused Lance to die in the restaurant.

Now that Jiang Ning was questioning them in front of Lance, they felt like an absolute disgrace.

"I'm asking you right now!" Lance's voice grew deeper and emanated a sort of authoritativeness, as if Jiang Ning was his subordinate.

Jiang Ning wasn't bothered by his question and couldn't even be bothered to say anything else. He started to push the door shut again and Lance quickly reached out to stop him.

"You're being rude!"

"I'm a guest!"

"Some guest you are," snorted Jiang Ning. He slammed the door shut and didn't care about Lance.

Lance's expression was livid. Nobody had ever dared to speak to him like that.

"Mr Lance," the bodyguards were furious. "This fellow is way too arrogant! We'll bang the door down!"

One of them was about to rush at the door but Lance stopped him.

"Stop it!" Lance shook his head. "Don't act rashly."

NH

Since Jiang Ning was able to discover a poison that his bodyguards couldn't, that meant that Jiang Ning was no ordinary person. Nobody knew exactly what was going on within this cruise at all, but someone was definitely out to kill him.

"All of you can go," said Lance as he said at his bodyguards.

"But..."

"It's alright, it's safe with him here."

Lance reached out to knock the door again.

DOONG DOONG DOONG.

The door opened with a creak.

"What are you eating?" Lance didn't ask about what happened earlier. His nose wrinkled slightly and he was already staring into the room. "It smells really good. I didn't get to eat anything just now."

Without waiting for Jiang Ning to say anything, he squeezed his way into the room.

Jiang Ning looked at him in annoyance and snorted out loud when he saw Lance staring at the pickled vegetables instant noodles on the table.

"This isn't good stuff, you know?"

"Do you have anymore?"

NH

Lance tried his best to keep calm, but he couldn't help swallowing a mouthful of saliva anyway.

Then his stomach started growling again.

"We do," Lin Yuzhen couldn't help but laugh and she took another bowl from the suitcase. "But you might not be used to this taste."

She looked at Jiang Ning to ask with her eyes if Lance could have the noodles. She had heard Lance's stomach growling clearly and was sure that this poor man had been too scared by the poisoning episode earlier to eat anything else on this cruise.

Jiang Ning didn't object, so Lin Yuzhen passed him the instant noodles and pointed at the electric kettle. Add some hot water and let it soak for three minutes, then you can eat it."

Lance froze. He had no idea how to do any of this.

Lin Yuzhen laughed and took the instant noodles back from him. She tore open the packaging, poured all the condiments in, walked to the kettle and poured in hot water. In no time, the fragrance started to waft out from the bowl and Lance's eyes were huge.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

If they didn't see it for themselves, Lance's bodyguards would never have thought this was really happening.

One of the most important members to the Salo family was actually hugging a bowl of instant noodles and gobbling it down hungrily!

Had he starved for a few days?

Was it really that good?

SLURP...SLURP...

After he started making those slurping sounds, he didn't look the least well-mannered anymore.

The only well-mannered part was the fact that Lance had used a paper napkin to catch any soup that might drip onto his clothes.

But the more he ate, the more he enjoyed it. He loved the sourness mixed in with the spiciness and the numbness of the chili, as well as the chewy texture of the noodles. He had completely forgotten that so many eyes were on him.

GULP!

The last mouthful of soup was gone.

Lance wiped his mouth and suddenly realized that he must have looked rather ugly earlier when he was slurping the noodles and his face instantly reddened.

"What's this called?"

NH

He purposely tried to look calm, but he was still enjoying that sour and spicy taste in his throat. He couldn't help but peek at Lin Yuzhen's suitcase because he thought he saw some more bowls of this stuff inside.

"Instant noodles," replied Lin Yuzhen.

"Is it very expensive?" asked Lance curiously.

Someone like him had grown up eating only the food cooked by top chefs and was sick of everything.

This was the first time he was eating something like this and he felt like he was walking on clouds. All his pores were still perspiring.

"It's quite expensive," Lin Yuzhen chuckled. "But I'm sure your family can afford it."

She poured Lance a cup of water and Lance quickly took it from her. "Thank you."

He didn't expect this lady to be so gentle. Every move she made was able to put him at ease.

But Jiang Ning stood next to her and seemed to be covered with spikes. His expression alone was unapproachable.

"Since you're done eating and drinking, then it's time you left the room." Jiang Ning didn't bother being polite at all. "Someone wants to kill you, so if you continue to stay here, he won't get a chance."

NH

Lance's face reddened in anger. He really hated the way Jiang Ning spoke.

"You're very confident," he said through gritted teeth. "So you're saying that as long as I'm here, nobody can kill me?"

"If not?" Jiang Ning shrugged. "Either you pay me protection fees, or you leave. Stop interrupting our date."

Lance trembled in fury.

But since he had eaten his fill, then he had to watch his manners.

He put the cup of water down quietly and ignored Jiang Ning. He turned to Lin Yuzhen and bowed slightly. "Thank you for your generosity, goodbye."

He turned and walked out of the room.

He couldn't be bothered to ask Jiang Ning again about how he had discovered the poison in his food. Jiang Ning's confidence was more like arrogance!

Lance walked to the door and turned around to nod slightly at Lin Yuzhen. He made sure to be as polite as he ought to.

After the door was shut, Lin Yuzhen glanced at Jiang Ning, then glanced at the bowl of instant noodles that was so well cleaned out, Lance was just short of eating the bowl itself.

"If he went to Shudu, he would probably end up

NH

drowning himself in all the delicious food that city offers,” she laughed.

“This fellow has never seen the world,” snorted Jiang Ning. “Take a rest, I’ll clear up.”

Outside the door.

Lance couldn’t help but lick his lips. He could still taste that sour and spicy taste.

“Investigate this for me,” he said.

“Yes, Mr Lance. I’ll call someone back home to check on these two people...”

“I want you to check what on earth I just ate just now.” Lance raised an eyebrow. He wasn’t asking them to check on the couple. “It was delicious.”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

With that, Lance turned to leave. His bodyguards exchanged glances and didn't know what to say, and quickly ran after him.

They had no idea what that was either. They had grown up under the care of the Salo family, so they also ate only the best food in the world. They...had really never seen instant noodles before.

Lance thought about these things while walking, and the bodyguards followed behind him closely as they kept a close eye on things.

Suddenly, a black figure flashed past them!

SWOOSH!

Before the bodyguards could react, one of them screamed in pain and collapsed.

His back had been slashed open and there was blood everywhere.

"There's an assassin!"

The bodyguards immediately surrounded Lance, but the number of figures in black increased, and they were now appearing in all directions.

And all of them were charging towards Lance!

SWOOSH!

SWOOSH!

SWOOSH!

Lance paled terribly. Someone was really out to kill him.

Who was it?!

Before he could think of who it could be, his bodyguards started fighting with the figures in black. But they were fast fighters and the daggers in their hands were even more vicious.

“Mr Lance, run!” Three of the bodyguards had been killed in the blink of an eye. Everyone else paled because they didn’t expect these assassins to be this formidable.

“We’ll block them, Mr Lance, run!”

Lance didn’t know where to go at all and his heart was going to leap out of his mouth soon. He had run into assassins before, but he couldn’t believe such a supposedly secure place would be rife with so many assassins!

Were the Jimmys a bunch of useless idiots?!

Lance ended up running towards Jiang Ning’s room. His bodyguards couldn’t hold up for long.

Compared to those assassins, his bodyguards were nothing.

They all died within moments.

Lance wasn’t sure if their howls and screams would attract the security guards on the cruise, and he wasn’t going to count on that either.

NH

There were footsteps running towards him. They were urgent and malicious, and seemed to carry icy cold knives!

“Help! Help!” Lance didn’t even dare to turn around to look. He ran to Jiang Ning’s room and banged violently against the door. “HELP!”

Swoosh!

Two figures in black came flying towards him like a ghost.

The sinister eyes beneath their mask were suffocatingly cold.

Lance watched as the dagger came towards his heart and was about to despair. His legs nearly gave way.

CREEAAK...

Just when the two figures in black almost reached Lance and that dagger was about to stab into Lance’s heart, the door opened.

Lance saw something move in front of his eyes. Was that a fist? He wasn’t sure.

After that, the two figures in black flew out like a kite whose string broke and crashed hard against the wall. They bounced off the floor with a muffled sound, then disappeared into the distance.

Jiang Ning walked out and dusted his hands off as he glanced at Lance who had collapsed onto

the floor.

“Why are you so hard to get rid of?” he frowned.
“You’ve already eaten one bowl of instant noodles and now you’re here to disturb my sleep?”

“You...” Lance’s eyes and mouth were still wide open.

He was still in a daze. Those two figures in black had just been sent flying like that, and he didn’t even see how Jiang Ning hit them.

That was terrifying.

His bodyguards were like children compared to Jiang Ning.

“No! Wait! Don’t close the door!” Lance was about to cry when he saw Jiang Ning start closing the door on him. He used his hand to push against the door. “Please don’t close the door! Someone is trying to kill me!”

All his bodyguards were already dead, so who else could he count on now?

Jimmy?

That useless asshole actually had assassins on his own cruise!

Jiang Ning glanced at him and scoffed quietly.
“And how is this any of my business?”

NH

PAK!

Lance's hand was nearly caught in the door.

Jiang Ning had just shut the door on Lance and didn't care about him at all.

Lance stared at the door, then spun around to look at the empty corridor behind him. He felt like those figures in black were staring at him right now.

He didn't dare to move and just leaned against Jiang Ning's door. He wanted to knock on the door again, but he was afraid that if he angered Jiang Ning, Jiang Ning would stop bothering about him.

Terror, helplessness and even fury continued to appear on Lance's face.

He was just here to attend a conference. Was he going to end up dying as well?

DA DA DA!

After some time, the corridor was filled with the sound of footsteps.

Jimmy had come with a few dozen security guards and they were all armed.

"Be on guard!" Jimmy shouted. He saw Lance slumped on the floor and his heart sank.

The guards immediately surrounded Lance.

NH

“Mr Lance!” Jimmy ran over. “Are you alright?”

Lance looked at Jimmy and the fury in his eyes was like a ball of fire that threatened to burn Jimmy alive.

“Jimmy!” he roared furiously. “Are you trying to get me killed?”

“How could that be?” Jimmy quickly tried to explain. “How could I possibly be trying to kill you, Mr Lance? We’re business partners, and the Salo family is a powerful family that I respect very much! I have no reason to harm you!”

He had already seen that Lance’s bodyguards were all dead.

This already shocked Jimmy to the core.

How could there be assassins on a cruise that belonged to his family? And these assassins were so vicious, and refused to let Lance go.

First they tried to poison Lance but failed, then now they attempted to kill Lance directly but ended up killing off all his bodyguards. Lance very nearly died on Jimmy’s cruise.

If the Salo family got angry about this, the Jimmys were in trouble!

“Damn it!” cursed Jimmy in his heart. Who was behind this?

If they weren’t here to harm Lance, then they were here to get the Jimmys into trouble.

NH

“Mr Lance, don’t worry, I won’t let anything happen to you! Please believe me!” said Jimmy.

But Lance shook his head.

How was he supposed to believe this?

This cruise belonged to the Jimmys and so did all the staff here. This was a conference organized by Jimmy as well. But now this cruise was filled with assassins and Lance felt like his life was in danger as long as he remained on this boat.

“I really can’t trust you on this,” said Lance. “I’m going to call my family to pick me up, so I want you to dock this cruise right now!”

Jimmy’s expression was rather nasty.

The conference hadn’t even started but they had to turn back now? Lance wasn’t the only big shot on this boat.

Too many people were at stake here.

“Mr Lance, please don’t worry. There is absolutely no problem with the security on this cruise. I...”

“All my bodyguards are dead!” Lance couldn’t help but shout. “If I wasn’t lucky enough, I wouldn’t even be standing here and talking to you!”

“Jimmy, I can tell you that even though I’m not really that important to the Salo family, but if I die on this cruise, then I’m sure you know very well what sort of trouble your family will be in!”

NH

Jimmy's face paled and he was so upset that he clenched his teeth.

This was a really big problem.

"Mr Lance, I understand, and that's why I will definitely make sure that you're safe. These bodyguards will protect you round the clock and they will not go anywhere!" said Jimmy. "I will launch an investigation immediately and I will weed out any assassins hiding in our midst!"

Then he waved his hand and made sure that a few dozen bodyguards remained close to Lance and didn't let anybody near him.

"The rest, come with me!" shouted Jimmy. "If you don't find the assassin, then you can all jump into the sea and die!"

Lance remained where he was and had no expression on his face.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Lance didn't trust Jimmy, and even suspected that these assassins might be connected to the Jimmys. He just wanted to stay outside Jiang Ning's room door. Even if he couldn't go in, just staying outside was probably the safest spot in the entire cruise.

Jimmy brought some of his men with him to locate the assassin, while Lance continued standing where he was.

He was surrounded by a few dozen armed bodyguards and protected him on all sides. They kept a close eye on all directions and made sure that not even a fly would make it in.

CREEAAAK...

After a long time, the room door opened.

Jiang Ning saw that Lance was still standing outside his room and couldn't help but frown.

"Why are you still here?"

KA KA KA!

A few dozen gun barrels were immediately aimed at Jiang Ning.

"Put them down!" shouted Lance anxiously. "How dare you be so rude!"

Jiang Ning's expression remained aloof and wasn't bothered by how these men pointed guns at him.

NH

But a murderous glint in his eye flashed by very quickly.

If any of these men tried anything funny, he would die before he could pull the trigger.

“I want to follow you,” said Lance after a moment of hesitation.

He really couldn't trust anybody else, especially Jimmy. It was probably safest to follow Jiang Ning around, even though he didn't know Jiang Ning at all and didn't even know Jiang Ning's name.

“I'm not so free,” Jiang Ning immediately turned him down.

“I'll pay protection fees!” said Lance. “Name your price, I'll accept it. I just need you to protect me until my family comes to pick me up.”

“Hello, do I look like someone who's short on money to you?” Jiang Ning asked with a disdainful snort as he pointed to himself.

Name his price?

The only person he was willing to protect in this world was Lin Yuzhen.

Even if anybody else offered him a gold mine, he wouldn't be interested.

When he saw Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen walk away, Lance quickly ran after them. The bodyguards sent by Jimmy immediately ran after

him as well.

“Hmm?” Jiang Ning turned and frowned.

“Don’t follow me!” yelled Lance at the bodyguards.

“But Mr Lance...”

“I said, don’t follow me!” he roared angrily and didn’t sound well-mannered anymore. “If anybody tries to follow me, I’ll make sure the Jimmys pay the price for doing that!”

Nobody dare to follow him after that.

Lance continued to follow behind Jiang Ning and kept a three meter distance at all times. He didn’t even dare to move one centimeter forward.

He went wherever Jiang Ning went, and wasn’t bothered by how Jiang Ning ignored him. As long as Jiang Ning remained within sight, he felt that he was safe.

“There’s an assassin on the cruise?” Lin Yuzhen held onto Jiang Ning’s arm and saw many people running around in a frenzy, and heard someone shout that there was an assassin on the boat.

Besides Lance, someone else had been attacked as well.

This was no small matter!

The cruise had already gone into open waters, so even if it wanted to turn back, it would take some time before it reached a harbor. If someone got

NH

attacked again during this time, the Jimmys security forces weren't going to be enough to protect everyone.

But Lin Yuzhen wasn't afraid.

She was next to Jiang Ning, which was the safest place in the world.

"There are assassins on the boat, and there are quite a number of them too," said Jiang Ning nonchalantly.

He talked about assassins like he was talking about garbage.

"But why can't anyone find them?" Lance blurted out.

Jimmy had already sent a few hundred men out to search the entire cruise, but they still couldn't find any clues.

It was as if those fellows had appeared from nowhere, and disappeared into thin air again.

"They're all hiding in the water, so it's going to be hard to find them." Jiang Ning turned and glanced at Lance as he narrowed his eyes slightly. "And why are you still following me?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Lance was a little stunned and his face turned red.

If anybody else shouted at him like that, he would have retorted with a so what?

He was from the Salo family after all, so following Jiang Ning should have been Jiang Ning's honor!

But he didn't dare to say something like this now.

"I just happened to be going to same way as you are." Lance coughed. "Did you say that the assassins are hiding in the water?"

Jiang Ning had to be kidding.

They were in open waters and the temperature of the water at this time of the year was very low. Besides, didn't these people need to breathe?

But Jimmy had already checked everyone on board the cruise, regardless of whether they were guests or staff, and nobody was suspicious.

But people continued to keep dying, and the entire cruise was now engulfed in fear.

Jiang Ning couldn't be bothered to waste his words on Lance.

Everyone else on the cruise was panicking and feeling fear, and Jiang Ning was probably the only one who remained calm throughout and wasn't bothered by this matter at all.

Assassins?

NH

Of course, these weren't assassins from Li Feidao's Assassins Group. Those people wouldn't create any trouble for Jiang Ning unless they were tired of living.

There was only one group of people who had this sort of ability and were great experts in hiding themselves.

The Japanese Warriors!

These were Japanese ninjas.

He ignored Lance and continued to walk around while holding Lin Yuzhen's hand. They milled around casually as if they were really on a date. They didn't seem affected by the feeling of fear and terror that had gripped the rest of the boat.

Lance continued following behind them and refused to go too far from them. It didn't matter if Jiang Ning ignored him or refused to talk to him.

Following Jiang Ning was the safest option.

Jimmy was really going nuts now.

In just one hour, another two people had died!

And these people were of pretty high standing too.

He had no choice but to gather everyone together so that all his bodyguards could protect everyone on board at the same time.

"Jimmy! What is going on?! How could there be

NH

assassins on your family's cruise?"

"Think of a way to dock the cruise! If anything happens to me, your family is going to answer for it!"

"This is a scheme by the Jimmys, isn't it?"

Angry voices continued to fill the air.

Some of them tried to contact their families to send someone to pick them up, but there was no signal out here.

Someone had also tampered with the cruise's own communication channel, so it would take quite some time to repair.

Jimmy's head was going to burst soon. He started coughing violently from his anxiety and the poison inside his body made him vomit blood.

Who on earth was behind this?

"Mr Jimmy, we've checked the entire cruise and discovered nothing," reported the leader of the bodyguards. "I'm afraid we have to check the waters under the boat."

They finally realized that there was nowhere for anyone to hide on the cruise, except in the waters beneath.

Jimmy's expression was livid.

"Check the waters!"

NH

Several people had already been killed, so the pressure on him was tremendous.

His conference and other plans weren't important now. Trying to keep these people alive and making sure that the Jimmys didn't end up having to take on too much responsibility for this was of utmost importance now.

In the waters?

He didn't care where they were. He was going to dig them out!

"Everyone, don't run about and just stay within the main lobby. That way, your safety will be ensured," shouted Jimmy.

But the people were restless and not everyone wanted to stay here. The air started getting very stuffy after a while, and the oppressive sentiment in the air made everyone very emotional.

"I want to go back to my room! If you want to protect me, then send someone to guard me outside my door! I don't want to stay here anymore!"

"Move aside! All of you are just useless pieces of trash! How could you allow assassins into the boat? Is that all the Jimmys are capable of?"

"Move aside! Don't bother me!"

NH

Jimmy clenched his teeth and tried his best to persuade the crowd.

He needed everyone to remain here in order for them to be protected and not let the assassins get a chance to kill them.

Jiang Ning shook his head and glanced at Jimmy like he was an idiot.

He picked up several snacks and carried some food on plates. "Let's go back to the room. It's even more dangerous here."

"Why?" Lin Yuzhen didn't understand.

"There are too many stupid people here."

Jiang Ning didn't explain and just left with Lin Yuzhen. He just ignored all those bodyguards.

They had guessed that the assassins were possibly hiding in the waters, but checking the waters now was too late.

Which assassin was so stupid?

They wouldn't just stay in the same place and not move. After Jiang Ning severely injured two of them, they would be on high alert.

These assassins were definitely on board the boat by now.

Besides, these Japanese Warriors weren't just good at hiding, but also good at disguising themselves.

NH

Some of the people on board were probably killed, then had their identities stolen. It was too dangerous to stay here.

Jiang Ning turned and left, so Lance quickly followed behind.

He didn't trust anyone else now, so he followed Jiang Ning everywhere.

Even though he didn't like Jiang Ning, he felt secure with Jiang Ning by his side. It was as if as long as Jiang Ning was around him, nothing would happen to him.

After all, he had seen Jiang Ning just send two of his assailants flying.

His bodyguards hadn't been to hold up against them but Jiang Ning sent them flying!

"I'll help you carry the plates and both of you can hold hands," Lance quickly offered his services and came up to carry the plates for Jiang Ning. He smiled ingratiatingly, "I'll help you to carry the plates, pass them to me!"

Jiang Ning glanced at him and nodded slightly.

"Not bad, you're quite observant. Your family raised you well, you're very well-mannered."

Lance wanted to curse at Jiang Ning but didn't dare to. He could only smile and nod as Jiang Ning complimented him.

At least Jiang Ning let him into the room.

NH

This was the safest place to be right now!

Meanwhile.

In the main lobby of the cruise.

There was a lot of space, as well as much food and drink. A few hundred bodyguards surrounded the guests and didn't let any strangers near the crowd.

The fear in the air slowly dissipated.

Those who chose to stay in the lobby slowly started to calm down.

Since so many armed bodyguards were protecting them, they felt that they were no longer in danger.

Jimmy had sent several men into the water to check, but they came up with nothing.

"What's going on?" Jimmy was furious. "Didn't you say the assassins were underwater? Where are they?!"

The leader of the bodyguards looked rather embarrassed. He had gone underwater himself, but there was nobody around the cruise nor under the boat.

"Perhaps..." His face was red as he grit his teeth and said, "Perhaps they've already killed the people they wanted and have left."

PAK!

NH

Just as he said these words, the lights in the main hall blacked out.

Then the lights in the corridor went dark.

Followed by the cabin lights.

ZZZ...

They were left with only some emergency lights, and green lights flashed as the piercing sound of the alarm went off.

Jimmy paled even further.

“What’s going on?!” he shouted. “Why did the electricity trip? Check what happened! Now!”

The main lobby suddenly plunged into darkness. The fear that had dissipated earlier immediately overwhelmed the people again.

Humans were fearful of the unknown, and there were too many unknowns in the darkness.

“AHHH!”

A bloodcurdling scream instantly struck everyone’s eardrums and made all of their hearts nearly leap out of their mouths!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

This scream made everyone's hair stand on end.

A few women started screaming and crying, and they could see others collapse in the darkness.

The ones standing next to those who collapsed felt a warm liquid spray onto their faces.

It was fresh blood!

“AHH!!”

Someone had died!

There was an assassin!

The assassins had already infiltrated the crowd.

It was as if a pack of wicked wolves had found their way into the sheep.

Jimmy felt like he was going to vomit blood soon.

“Get medical help!” his voice was hoarse.

These assassins...had actually found their way into the main lobby.

There was a problem with the main power supply, so the lights were all off, and it was too hard to tell where the assassins were in this darkness.

Screams filled the air as everyone started running about in a panic.

The people crashed into each other, tripped over others, and there was much screaming and

NH

crying...

This place had suddenly turned into a horror movie.

“Help those people! Help those who’ve been attacked!” yelled Jimmy loudly. “Kill those assassins!”

He continued to shout away furiously.

The leader of the bodyguards was furious too. After being in this job for so many years, this was the first time he had been provoked like this.

This was as good as slapping him in the face.

“Over there! Chase them down!” he roared as he was about to give chase when he suddenly felt a terrible pain in his waist.

He spun around and the bodyguard right next to him suddenly laughed threateningly and his gaze was clearly unfamiliar.

“You...”

Before he could do anything, a fist landed on his face and blood spurted everywhere.

Jimmy was right next to him, and started shouting away in fear.

The blood of the leader of the bodyguards had sprayed all over his face.

“An assassin...an assassin!” He didn’t expect the

NH

assassins to have infiltrated his group of bodyguards as well...

The entire main lobby of the cruise was in chaos.

At the same time.

Jiang Ning was in the room and Lin Yuzhen didn't know what was happening outside either.

Jiang Ning frowned slightly when he saw the lights flicker.

"These idiots are really stupid."

Lance's heart pounded wildly.

"Jiang Ning, everything will be ok, right?"

He took a step closer.

"AHH!"

There was suddenly a scream from outside the door and Lance immediately stood up as he looked at the room door with a pale face.

"Something's happened!"

Something must have happened!

In fact, this shout sounded familiar to him. It sounded like one of the founders of a company in Silicon Valley. Could he...could he be dead?

Jiang Ning got up and Lin Yuzhen wanted to follow him.

“Sit here and don’t move.”

He had no idea how many assassins were out there and Jiang Ning could ensure Lin Yuzhen’s safety, but he wasn’t able to nor was he obliged to protect the hundreds of other passengers on board this cruise.

He walked to the door, opened it and looked out into the corridor.

Jiang Ning’s eyes were scarily bright in the darkness.

They looked like two stars in the night, and anyone who saw them would feel like they had fallen into a deep abyss and might even lose their consciousness.

There were a few dark shadows at the end of the corridor and they met Jiang Ning’s eyes.

In that instant, they stopped coming any nearer.

Jiang Ning didn’t move and just stood at the door. There was a strong stench of blood in the air as well as a cold and sinister sense of murder.

Lance was hiding behind Jiang Ning and he could feel like his legs no longer belonged to him. He spotted the assassins as well!

They were here!

But Jiang Ning just stood at the door and those shadows didn’t dare to come near at all. Instead, they cautiously retreated and disappeared into the

NH

darkness again. It was as if the ten meter radius around Jiang Ning's room was a forbidden zone.

“They...they're gone?”

Lance gulped.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Lance was really frightened to pieces.

He never thought that he would run into an assassin by attending a conference, and didn't expect the entire cruise to become a terrifying place.

If he hadn't run into Jiang Ning, he would definitely die today!

"Of course they're gone. You think they'd rather die at my hands?" Jiang Ning was very calm and his voice carried a tinge of disdain. He looked at the corridor one more time, scoffed coldly, then shut the door again.

These assassins were smart enough. After encountering him once, they knew that Jiang Ning wasn't someone they could afford to offend.

If they dared to come near and pose any threat to Lin Yuzhen, Jiang Ning would wring their necks without hesitation.

"Just stay here and don't worry," said Jiang Ning. "Once they're done killing everyone on their name list, they'll leave."

Lance opened his mouth and swallowed.

His name was probably on that list.

He didn't dare to go out, because he would surely die.

Lance sat down and his frightened and cautious expression no longer carried any of his

NH

gentlemanly aura. He now wished he could just sit on Jiang Ning's lap and never leave Jiang Ning.

"They're so cruel?" Lin Yuzhen had gone through many things with Jiang Ning, but something like this still made her feel a little afraid.

She didn't think of getting Jiang Ning to be a hero and rescue the other passengers, because that was too dangerous.

Those assassins weren't after them, so there was no need for Jiang Ning to take such a risk. Jiang Ning wasn't going to be responsible for anyone's safety except hers.

"This world is just that cruel," said Jiang Ning. "You can see all these people getting killed now, but you didn't see that their filthy hands were also covered with blood."

He looked towards Lance.

"I've never killed anybody!" he quickly defended himself.

"You haven't, but what about your family?" Jiang Ning laughed coldly. "As a longstanding Third World aristocratic family, your clan has accumulated centuries of resources. Didn't the clan rely on plundering others to gain these resources?"

Lance fell silent.

Jiang Ning was right.

NH

Clans like his had managed to rise up over the years because of centuries of plundering others. The amount of blood on their hands was way more and way crueller than the horrors they were seeing on this cruise right now.

Killing others and getting killed was part of survival in the Third World.

They were also the ones who created that huge warzone in the Middle East as well. For the sake of more resources, they were willing to kill other people. The Third World was the most cruel place on earth!

“Trying to use the darkness to exchange for the light is impossible. All you will get is darkness, and it is a darkness with no boundaries,” said Jiang Ning quietly.

“So there’s no need to pity them. They deserve it.”

Jiang Ning always told Lin Yuzhen about how cruel this world really was.

The way he protected Lin Yuzhen was never to completely cut her off from the dark side of the world, but to let her walk through the darkness and still be able to discern right from wrong, as well as keep that kind and pure heart that she possessed.

There was no hatred that came out from nowhere. There was a reason for everything.

“That’s the way we survive,” Lance shook his head. “It’s always been like this, and it’s

impossible to change it.”

“Have you tried changing it?”

Jiang Ning looked at him, but Lance couldn't respond at all.

Of course he had never tried to change anything, and it didn't even cross his mind to try. These were the rules to survival for so many centuries now, so it was a normal thing to him.

Sometimes he would find it cruel and would feel a little guilt and unwillingness inside, but he didn't think he could change anything.

“You've never even tried, so how could you say that it can't be changed? You just don't want to change,” said Jiang Ning. “Since you don't want to change, then you will continue in this way. So even if you end up dying on this cruise, you deserve it!”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Jiang Ning didn't bother being polite.

He didn't need to be.

It was precisely because these Third World powers existed that the world was in such a mess.

These powers were behind many countries' politics, economy and even culture. They had control over the direction of the world and manipulated others for the sake of their own benefit.

Lance didn't dare to refute Jiang Ning at all.

He knew all about this and he had wondered if continuing like this was wrong, and whether there was a way to change it.

But he eventually realized that he couldn't change anything.

The rules were such, and this was essentially the embodiment of the law of the jungle in the city. Nobody could change this.

"As long as the rules don't change, such things will keep happening. That's why your clans never allow anybody to become significant in the advancement of the clan, because they're afraid that this significant person would suddenly be killed."

Jiang Ning glanced at Lance. "It's very tiring to live in fear all the time."

NH

Lance took a deep breath, shook his head and laughed bitterly. "It is very tiring."

He had to make all sorts of preparations every single day because someone might come to kill him. He would either die, or be lucky enough to survive.

He had no idea when he might suddenly be killed or who might possibly kill him.

After all, the various powers had been fighting for so long and had fought bloody battles for decades or even centuries. Some of these feuds were impossible to resolve.

It was tiring. It was very sad and tiring.

Nobody wanted to live only to wait for death to come knocking on their door.

But what could he do about that?

As a member of the Salo family, he knew that longstanding clans like his had to either keep becoming more and more powerful to the point where nobody dared to ruffle their feathers, otherwise they would be killed off by other new powers and disappear forever.

Lance sat back down on a chair and felt rather dejected. He suddenly felt like there was no point in living anymore.

But of course, he was more afraid to die and didn't want to die. He knew that if he walked out of this room, someone would come after him

immediately.

Meanwhile.

The screams on the cruise continued.

People were running for their lives in all directions.

Jimmy was going crazy.

He was nearly murdered as well!

A black shadow was catching up from behind and Jimmy was really going mad. Who were these nutcases?!

BAM!

Suddenly, that shadow fell to the floor and started bleeding from his nose and mouth.

Jimmy took a deep breath and looked up to see Fang Yin dust his palms off. Some white powder fell onto the man in black on the floor and it made a sizzling sound.

“Japanese Warriors, tsk.” Fang Yin scoffed and his face was covered with disdain.

He was having a good time in the room when suddenly the lights went out and the terrible screams outside made him very annoyed.

He didn't care about what was happening outside. Even if someone was getting killed, it had nothing to do with him.

But he didn't like it when his mood was affected.

“The Japanese Warriors? You mean they're from the Yamaguchi Syndicate?!” When Jimmy heard what Fang Yin said, he clenched his teeth. “These assholes actually dared to come here and kill so many people!”

He looked at Fang Yin. If Fang Yin hadn't saved him in time, he would be dead by now.

“Your life is mine, so I'm the only one allowed to kill you.”

Fang Yin's words made Jimmy angry and hateful, but there was nothing he could do about it.

At least he was still alive.

“If these Japanese Warriors kill off all those important people, then you can forget about getting that manual.”

Jimmy took a deep breath. He knew Fang Yin's weakness, and this was the only thing he could use to make Fang Yin work for him.

As expected, Fang Yin immediately narrowed his eyes when he heard this.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

“If something happens to them, their families will hold my family accountable, so it will become almost impossible for me to get anywhere near them in the future.”

“I organized this conference in order to get close to them and eventually get the manual. You know all about this, I don’t have to explain it to you,” said Jimmy.

“Humph.” Fang Yin just scoffed and disappeared into the darkness.

He was getting that manual by hook or by crook. If anyone stood in his way, he’d kill him!

Jimmy breathed a sigh of relief. If Fang Yin was willing to deal with these assassins, then everything would be fine.

Fang Yin was more terrifying than those Japanese Warriors, and he was excellent at using poison.

He was suddenly glad that Fang Yin was still on the cruise. Otherwise he would perish on this cruise as well!

After a while, the lights flickered back on as the electricity supply came back.

There was a lot of blood all over the floor as well as several dead bodies lying everywhere. The remaining survivors were all trembling as they either hugged each other or curled up in a corner. None of them looked like they were big shots anymore.

NH

Jimmy got his staff to quickly clean up the place and his face was rather pale.

After something like that had happened, his family would have to be answerable for what happened and it was going to be hard to explain things.

THUD!

Fang Yin flung one of the Warriors in front of Jimmy. "This fellow should be the leader of the assassins. With this guy in your hands, you can be accountable to the families of the victims, right?"

Jimmy looked at the man before him. His limbs had all been broken and there was something in his mouth as well. Fang Yin didn't even give him the chance to kill himself.

"With this fellow, I can prove that they were the ones behind this." Jimmy took a deep breath. "Don't worry, I will do what I promised you."

He then took a step forward and slapped the Warrior across the face as he spat fiercely, "How dare you try to attack us! The Yamaguchi Syndicate is really bold, huh! You will have to pay the price for doing this! Take him away!"

The Yamaguchi Syndicate was also a Third World power, but it was still far off from the top aristocratic families.

Since they had dared to be crazy enough to kill all these people from major Third World powers, then they could settle this feud themselves.

NH

He just wanted to make sure he wouldn't be held responsible.

Thankfully, Lance didn't die. Otherwise, things would really become very tricky.

The cruise was safe now.

Jiang Ning walked out of the room with Lin Yuzhen and Lance continued to follow closely behind them.

After what had happened, nobody wanted to continue with the conference and begged Jimmy to dock the cruise.

They had discovered a name list on that Warrior, and Lance's name was part of that list!

Jimmy didn't dare to refuse his passengers' requests and was afraid of more trouble.

The cruise made a U-turn and once it reached the harbor, Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen got off the cruise. Lance was still behind them.

"Let me follow you two," said Lance. "My folks aren't here yet and...I don't dare to wander about by myself."

His bodyguards were all dead and he was only able to contact his family after the cruise had docked. It would take them some time to get here.

"We're not staying here." Jiang Ning didn't elaborate further and walked away with Lin

NH

Yuzhen. Since the conference wasn't happening, they weren't going to stay in this foreign country any longer.

Lance was going wherever they were going.

Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen bought plane tickets immediately and Lance quickly caught up with them. He refused to leave them.

"Where are you two going?" Lance looked at the destination on the plane ticket. It was a place he had never been to nor even heard of. "Shudu? What place is this? Is this where you live?"

Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen exchanged glances.

"That's heaven," said Lin Yuzhen with a smile.

Heaven?!

Lance's face instantly paled.

Only dead people went to heaven!

Were they...were they going to send him to his death?!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

NH

Lance was very anxious and hesitated several times before finally choosing to board the plane with Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen to head towards Shudu.

Heaven...

This was really heaven!

The moment he followed them into the city, Lance's eyes started glowing like a wolf's.

"It smells good! It smells so good!"

The fragrance wafting from the food stalls that flanked both sides of the street made Lance feel like his soul was dancing.

He had never seen roadside stalls before. He used to either go to high class restaurants or ate the food that his family chefs prepared. His family never ate anything that wasn't expensive or classy enough.

But on the cruise, the instant noodles from Lin Yuzhen had opened the world of his tastebuds to discover new horizons.

"Could I change some money with you?"

Lance didn't have a lot of cash, and they were all foreign currency. These small stalls didn't accept credit card either.

He could only smile awkwardly and ask to change money with Lin Yuzhen.

NH

He knew it was pointless asking Jiang Ning.

“It’s alright, I’ll just lend you money.” Lin Yuzhen took her phone out and scanned the QR code of the small stall and paid the stall owner with the press of a button on her phone. Lance was stunned by this sight.

“This...”

“This is how we pay for things around here,” said Lin Yuzhen. “We’re going into the cashless era.”

Lance took a deep breath. He had heard of such things before, but this was the first time he was experiencing it for himself.

This seemed very high tech, but it was commonplace even on the small streets.

“The integrated circuits that our company is developing will be in line with all these products,” said Lin Yuzhen proudly. “It will help everyone to enjoy greater convenience in their lives, make the world a better, more environmentally friendly and a safer place.”

Lance nodded and gave a thumbs up, but his eyes were looking at the stall owner. “It’s yummy! It’s yummy!”

This huge fried dough twist was both sweet and tangy, and the sesame seeds on it were very fragrant.

Lance wasn’t listening to Lin Yuzhen and was filled with nothing but the fragrance of the food

around him.

He just continued eating as they walked along and Lance kept exclaiming excitedly. This was really heaven!

“I’ve suddenly discovered a new interest of mine,” said Lance with a smile. “There’s too much good food here!”

He had finally stumbled upon heaven.

“I’m going to eat everything in China within a year!” Lance laughed loudly.

He had no idea that three years later, he would still be in Shudu and wouldn’t even have covered half the city.

BURP!

After having his fill, Lance sat on a bench along the street and rubbed his stomach in an uncouth manner. He didn’t care about looking refined anymore.

No aristocrats were walking around here anyway, and nobody cared about how he looked.

“You said that your company is developing integrated circuits?” Lance suddenly thought about what Lin Yuzhen said earlier.

“That’s right.” Lin Yuzhen passed him a bottle of water. “Have you heard of Lin Group?”

Lance looked at Jiang Ning and shook his head.

“Isn’t his surname Jiang?”

As far as he could see, Jiang Ning was very powerful, so the company ought to belong to him. Why was it Lin Group and not Jiang Group?

“I work for him,” Lin Yuzhen laughed.

She glanced at Jiang Ning and realized she never thought of it this way. Even though it was called Lin Group, everyone in the company knew that Jiang Ning was the real boss.

She was the CEO, but she was working for Jiang Ning as well.

“That’s really incredible, it really is,” said Lance. “I didn’t think that the technology in China had reached this stage. This is even more advanced than any other country.”

He looked around and noticed that everyone just needed a phone to go places.

There was no need to carry any cards or documents. The phone could do everything!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!